The precise tail behavior of the total progeny of a killed branching random walk

Citation for published version (APA):

DOI:
10.1214/13-AOP842

Document status and date:
Published: 01/01/2013

Document Version:
Publisher’s PDF, also known as Version of Record (includes final page, issue and volume numbers)

Please check the document version of this publication:

• A submitted manuscript is the version of the article upon submission and before peer-review. There can be important differences between the submitted version and the official published version of record. People interested in the research are advised to contact the author for the final version of the publication, or visit the DOI to the publisher’s website.
• The final author version and the galley proof are versions of the publication after peer review.
• The final published version features the final layout of the paper including the volume, issue and page numbers.

Link to publication

General rights
Copyright and moral rights for the publications made accessible in the public portal are retained by the authors and/or other copyright owners and it is a condition of accessing publications that users recognise and abide by the legal requirements associated with these rights.

• Users may download and print one copy of any publication from the public portal for the purpose of private study or research.
• You may not further distribute the material or use it for any profit-making activity or commercial gain
• You may freely distribute the URL identifying the publication in the public portal.

If the publication is distributed under the terms of Article 25fa of the Dutch Copyright Act, indicated by the “Taverne” license above, please follow below link for the End User Agreement:
www.tue.nl/taverne

Take down policy
If you believe that this document breaches copyright please contact us at:
openaccess@tue.nl
providing details and we will investigate your claim.

Download date: 02. Oct. 2020
THE PRECISE TAIL BEHAVIOR OF THE TOTAL PROGENY OF A KILLED BRANCHING RANDOM WALK

BY ELIE AÏDÉKON, YUEYUN HU AND OLIVIER ZINDY

Eindhoven University of Technology, Université Paris VI and Université Paris XIII

Consider a branching random walk on the real line with a killing barrier at zero: starting from a nonnegative point, particles reproduce and move independently, but are killed when they touch the negative half-line. The population of the killed branching random walk dies out almost surely in both critical and subcritical cases, where by subcritical case we mean that the rightmost particle of the branching random walk without killing has a negative speed, and by critical case, when this speed is zero. We investigate the total progeny of the killed branching random walk and give their precise tail distribution both in the critical and subcritical cases, which solves an open problem of Aldous [Power laws and killed branching random walks, http://www.stat.berkeley.edu/~aldous/Research/OP/brw.html].

1. Introduction. We consider a one-dimensional discrete-time branching random walk $V$ on the real line $\mathbb{R}$. At the beginning, there is a single particle located at the origin 0. Its children, who form the first generation, are positioned according to a certain point process $\mathscr{L}$ on $\mathbb{R}$. Each of the particles in the first generation independently gives birth to new particles that are positioned (with respect to their birth places) according to a point process with the same law as $\mathscr{L}$; they form the second generation. And so on. For any $n \geq 1$, each particle at generation $n$ produces new particles independently of one another and of everything up to the $n$th generation.

Clearly, the particles of the branching random walk $V$ form a Galton–Watson tree, which we denote by $T$. Call $\varnothing$ the root. For every vertex $u \in T$, we denote by $|u|$ its generation (then $|\varnothing| = 0$) and by $(V(u), |u|) = n$ the positions of the particles in the $n$th generation. Then $\mathscr{L} = \sum_{|u| = 1} \delta_{(V(u))}$. The tree $T$ will encode the genealogy of our branching random walk.

It will be more convenient to consider a branching random walk $V$ starting from an arbitrary $x \in \mathbb{R}$ [namely, $V(\varnothing) = x$], whose law is denoted by $P_x$ and the corresponding expectation by $E_x$. For simplification, we write $P \equiv P_0$ and $E \equiv E_0$. Let $\nu := \sum_{|u| = 1} 1$ be the number of particles in the first generation, and denote by $\nu(u)$ the number of children of $u \in T$.

Received February 2011; revised January 2013.

Supported by the French ANR 2010 Blanc 0125 (MEMEMO2) and the Netherlands Organisation for Scientific Research (NWO).

MSC2010 subject classifications. 60J80, 60F05.

Key words and phrases. Killed branching random walk, total progeny, spinal decomposition, Yaglom-type theorem, time reversed random walk.
Assume that \( E[\nu] > 1 \), namely the Galton–Watson tree \( T \) is supercritical. Then the system survives with positive probability \( P(T = \infty) > 0 \). Let us define the logarithmic generating function for the branching walk

\[
\psi(t) := \log E \left[ \sum_{|u|=1} e^{t V(u)} \right] \in (-\infty, +\infty], \quad t \in \mathbb{R}.
\]

We shall assume that \( \psi \) is finite on an open interval containing 0 and that \( \text{supp} \mathcal{L} \cap (0, \infty) \neq \emptyset \) [the later condition is to ensure that \( V \) can visit \((0, \infty)\) with positive probability, otherwise the problem that we shall consider becomes of a different nature]. Assume that there exists \( \varrho_\ast > 0 \) such that

\[
(1.1) \quad \psi(\varrho_\ast) = \varrho_\ast \psi'(\varrho_\ast).
\]

We also assume that \( \psi \) is finite on an open set containing \([0, \varrho_\ast]\). The condition (1.1) is not restrictive: For instance, if we denote by \( m_\ast = \text{esssup} \text{supp} \mathcal{L} \), then (1.1) is satisfied if either \( m_\ast = \infty \) or \( m_\ast < \infty \) and \( E \sum_{|u|=1} 1 \{ V(u)=m_\ast \} < 1 \); see Jaffuel [18] for detailed discussions.

Recall that (Kingman [23], Hammersley [14], Biggins [7]) conditioned on \( \{T = \infty\} \),

\[
(1.2) \quad \lim_{n \to \infty} \frac{1}{n} \max_{|u|=n} V(u) = \psi'(\varrho_\ast) \quad \text{a.s.,}
\]

where \( \varrho_\ast \) is given in (1.1). According to \( \psi'(\varrho_\ast) = 0 \) or \( \psi'(\varrho_\ast) < 0 \), we call the case critical or subcritical. Conditioned on \( \{T = \infty\} \), the rightmost particle in the branching random walk without killing has a negative speed in the subcritical case, while in the critical case it converges almost surely to \(-\infty\) in the logarithmical scale; see [16] and [2] for the precise statement of the rate of almost sure convergence.

We now place a killing barrier at zero: any particle which enters \((-\infty, 0)\) is removed and does not produce any offspring. Hence at every generation \( n \geq 0 \), only the particles that always stayed nonnegative up to time \( n \) survive. Denote by \( \mathcal{Z} \) the set of all surviving particles of the killed branching walk,

\[
\mathcal{Z} := \{ u \in T : V(v) \geq 0, \forall v \in [\emptyset, u] \},
\]

where \([\emptyset, u]\) denotes the shortest path in the tree \( T \) from \( u \) to the root \( \emptyset \). We are interested in the total progeny

\[
Z := \#\mathcal{Z}.
\]

Then \( Z < \infty, a.s. \), in both critical and subcritical cases. David Aldous made the following conjecture:

**CONJECTURE** (Aldous [4]).

(i) **(Critical case).** If \( \psi'(\varrho_\ast) = 0 \), then \( E[Z] < \infty \) and \( E[Z \log Z] = \infty \).
(ii) (Subcritical case). If $\psi'(\varrho_*) < 0$, then there exists some constant $b > 1$ such that $P(Z > n) = n^{-b+o(1)}$ as $n \to \infty$.

Let us define an i.i.d. case when $L$ is of the form $L = \sum_{i=1}^{\nu} \delta_{\{X_i\}}$ with $(X_i)_{i \geq 1}$ a sequence of i.i.d. real-valued variables, independent of $\nu$. There are several previous works on the critical and i.i.d. cases: when $(X_i)$ are Bernoulli random variables, Pemantle [30] obtained the precise asymptotic of $P(Z = n)$ as $n \to \infty$, where the key ingredient of his proof is the recursive structure of the system inherited from the Bernoulli variables $(X_i)$. For general random variables $(X_i)$, Addario-Berry and Broutin [1] recently confirmed Aldous’s conjecture (i). This was improved later by Aïdékon [3] who proved that for a regular tree $T$ (namely when $\nu$ equals some integer), for any fixed $x \geq 0$,

$$c_1 R(x) e^{\varrho_+ x} \leq \liminf_{n \to \infty} n (\log n)^2 P_x(Z > n) \leq \limsup_{n \to \infty} n (\log n)^2 P_x(Z > n) \leq c_2 R(x) e^{\varrho_+ x},$$

where $c_2 > c_1 > 0$ are two constants, and $R(x)$ is some renewal function which will be defined later. For the continuous setting, the branching Brownian motion, Maillard [28] solved the question by analytic tools, using link with the F-KPP equation. Berestycki et al. [5] looked at the genealogy of the branching Brownian motion with absorption in the near-critical case.

In this paper, we aim at the exact tail behavior of $Z$ both in critical and subcritical cases and for a general point process $L$.

Before the statement of our result, we remark that in the subcritical case ($\psi'(<\varrho_*) < 0$), there are two real numbers $\varrho_-$ and $\varrho_+$ such that $0 < \varrho_- < \varrho_* < \varrho_+$ and

$$\psi(\varrho_-) = \psi(\varrho_+) = 0,$$

[the existence of $\varrho_+$ follows from the assumption that $\text{supp} L \cap (0, \infty) \neq \emptyset$].

In the critical case, we suppose that

$$\mathbb{E}[\nu^{1+\delta^*}] < \infty, \quad \sup_{\theta \in [-\delta^*, \varrho_+ + \delta^*]} \psi(\theta) < \infty \quad \text{for some } \delta^* > 0.$$  \hfill (1.3)

In the subcritical case, we suppose that

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\left(\sum_{|u|=1} (1 + e^{\varrho_- - V(u)})^{\varrho_/\varrho_- + \delta^*}\right)^{\varrho_+/\varrho_- + \delta^*}\right] < \infty, \quad \sup_{\theta \in [-\delta^*, \varrho_+ + \delta^*]} \psi(\theta) < \infty,$$  \hfill (1.4)

for some $\delta^* > 0$. In both cases, we always assume that there is no lattice that supports $L$ almost surely.

Our result on the total progeny reads as follows.
THEOREM 1 (Tail of the total progeny). Assume \((1.1)\) and that

\[(1.5) \quad E[\nu^\alpha] < \infty \quad \text{for some } \begin{cases} \alpha > 2, & \text{in the critical case;} \\ \alpha > \frac{2Q^+}{\varrho^-}, & \text{in the subcritical case.} \end{cases} \]

(i) \((\text{Critical case})\). If \(\psi'(\varrho_*) = 0\) and \((1.3)\) holds, then there exists a constant \(c_{\text{crit}} > 0\) such that for any \(x \geq 0\),

\[P_x(Z > n) \sim c_{\text{crit}} R(x) e^{\varrho_* x} \frac{1}{n (\log n)^2}, \quad n \to \infty,\]

where \(R(x)\) is a renewal function defined in \((5.20)\).

(ii) \((\text{Subcritical case})\). If \(\psi'(\varrho_*) < 0\) and \((1.4)\) holds, then there exists a constant \(c_{\text{sub}} > 0\) such that for any \(x \geq 0\),

\[P_x(Z > n) \sim c_{\text{sub}} R(x) e^{\varrho_+ n^{-\varrho_+} / \varrho_-}, \quad n \to \infty,\]

where \(R(x)\) is a renewal function defined in \((5.20)\).

The values of \(c_{\text{crit}}\) and \(c_{\text{sub}}\) are given in Lemma 2. Let us make some remarks on the assumptions \((1.3)\) and \((1.4)\).

REMARK 1 (I.i.d. case). If \(\mathcal{L} = \sum_{i=1}^{\nu_i} \delta_{(X_i)}\) with \((X_i)_{i \geq 1}\) a sequence of i.i.d. real-valued variables, independent of \(\nu\), then \((1.3)\) holds if and only if for some \(\delta > 0\),

\[E[\nu^{1+\delta}] < \infty\]

and \(\sup_{\theta \in [-\delta, \varrho_* + \delta]} E[e^{\theta X_1}] < \infty\) while \((1.4)\) holds if and only if \(E[\nu^{\varrho_+ / \varrho_- + \delta}] < \infty\) and \(\sup_{\theta \in [-\delta, \varrho_* + \delta]} E[e^{\theta X_1}] < \infty\) for some \(\delta > 0\).

REMARK 2. By Hölder’s inequality, elementary computations show that \((1.3)\) is equivalent to \(E[(\sum_{|u|=1} (1 + e^{\varrho_* V(u)})^{1+\delta})] < \infty\) and \(\sup_{\theta \in [-\delta, \varrho_* + \delta]} \psi'(\theta) < \infty\), for some \(\delta > 0\).

To explain the strategy of the proof of Theorem 1, we introduce at first some notation: for any vertex \(u \in \mathcal{T}\) and \(a \in \mathbb{R}\), we define

\[
\tau^+_a(u) := \inf\{0 \leq k \leq |u| : V(u_k) > a\},
\]

\[
\tau^-_a(u) := \inf\{0 \leq k \leq |u| : V(u_k) < a\},
\]

with convention \(\inf \emptyset := \infty\) and for \(n \geq 1\) and for any \(|u| = n\), we write \(\{u_0 = \emptyset, u_1, \ldots, u_n\} = [\emptyset, u]\) the shortest path from the root \(\emptyset\) to \(u\) (\(u_k\) is the ancestor of \(k\)th generation of \(u\)).

By using these notation, the total progeny set \(\mathcal{Z}\) of the killed branching random walk can be represented as follows:

\[\mathcal{Z} = \{u \in \mathcal{T} : \tau^-_0(u) > |u|\}\.]
For \( a \leq x \), we define \( \mathcal{L}[a] \) as the set of individuals of the (nonkilled) branching random walk which lie below \( a \) for its first time (see Figure 1):

\[
\mathcal{L}[a] := \{ u \in \mathcal{T} : |u| = \tau_a^-(u) \}, \quad a \leq x.
\]

Since the whole system goes to \(-\infty\), \( \mathcal{L}[a] \) is well defined. In particular, \( \mathcal{L}[0] \) is the set of leaves of the progeny of the killed branching walk. As an application of a general fact for a wide class of graphs, we can compare the set of leaves \( \mathcal{L}[0] \) with \( \mathbb{Z} \). Then it is enough to investigate the tail asymptotics of \( \#\mathcal{L}[0] \).

To state the result for \( \#\mathcal{L}[0] \), we shall need an auxiliary random walk \( S \), under a probability \( Q \), which are defined, respectively, in (5.17) and in (5.16) with the parameter there \( \varrho = \varrho_* \) in the critical case, and \( \varrho = \varrho_+ \) in the subcritical case. We mention that under \( Q \), the random walk \( S \) is recurrent in the critical case and transient in the subcritical case. Let us also consider the renewal function \( R(x) \) associated to \( S \) [see (5.20)] and \( \tau_0^- \) the first time when \( S \) becomes negative; see (5.8).

For notational simplification, let us write \( Q[\xi] \) for the expectation of \( \xi \) under \( Q \).

Then we have the following theorem.

**THEOREM 2 (Tail of the number of leaves).** Assume (1.1).

(i) (Critical case). If \( \psi'(\varrho_*) = 0 \) and (1.3) holds, then for any \( x \geq 0 \), we have when \( n \to \infty \)

\[
P_x(\#\mathcal{L}[0] > n) \sim c'_{\text{crit}}(x) e^{\varrho_* x} \frac{1}{n(\log n)^2},
\]

where \( c'_{\text{crit}} := Q[e^{-\varrho_* S_{\tau_0^-}}] - 1 \).

(ii) (Subcritical case). if \( \psi'(\varrho_*) < 0 \) and (1.4) holds, then we have for any \( x \geq 0 \) when \( n \to \infty \),

\[
P_x(\#\mathcal{L}[0] > n) \sim c'_{\text{sub}}(x) e^{\varrho_+ x} n^{-e_+ / e_-}
\]

for some constant \( c'_{\text{sub}} > 0 \).
We stress that $Q$, $S$ and $R(\cdot)$ depend on the parameter $\varrho = \varrho_*$ (critical case) or $\varrho = \varrho_+$ (subcritical case). If $\sum_{|u|=1} (1 + e^{\varrho - V(u)})$ has some larger moments, then we can give, as in the critical case (i), a probabilistic interpretation of the constant $c'_{\text{sub}}$ in the subcritical case.

**Lemma 1.** Under (1.1) with $\psi'(\varrho_*) < 0$ and (1.4). Let us assume furthermore that

\[
E\left[ \left( \sum_{|u|=1} (1 + e^{\varrho - V(u)}) \right)^{e^+ / e^- + 1 + \delta} \right] < \infty \quad \text{for some } \delta > 0,
\]

then

\[
c'_{\text{sub}} = c_\varrho - (c'_{\text{sub}})^{e^-} Q(\tau_0^- = \infty),
\]

where $c_\varrho$ and $c'_{\text{sub}}$ are given, respectively, by (8.18) and Lemma 21. \([Q(\tau_0^- = \infty) > 0 \text{ since the random walk } S \text{ under } Q \text{ drifts to } \infty].\]

The next lemma establishes the relation between $\#L[0]$ and the total progeny $Z = \#\mathcal{Z}$. Recall that $E[\nu] > 1$.

**Lemma 2.** Assume (1.5). Then Theorem 2 implies Theorem 1 with:

(i) in the critical case: $c_{\text{crit}} = (E[\nu] - 1)^{-1} c'_{\text{crit}}$;

(ii) in the subcritical case: $c_{\text{sub}} = (E[\nu] - 1)^{-e^+ / e^-} c'_{\text{sub}}$.

The above lemma will be proven in Section 3, and the rest of this paper is devoted to the proof of Theorem 2. To this end, we shall investigate the maximum of the killed branching random walk and its progeny. Define for any $L > 0$,

\[
H(L) := \sum_u 1_{\{\tau_0^-(u) > \tau_L^-(u) = |u|\}} = \#\mathcal{H}(L), \quad L > 0,
\]

where

\[
\mathcal{H}(L) := \{u \in T : \tau_0^-(u) > \tau_L^+(u) = |u|\}
\]

denotes the set of particles of the branching random walk on $[0, L]$ with two killing barriers which were absorbed at level $L$ [then $\mathcal{H}(L) \subset \mathcal{Z}$]. Finally, we define

\[
Z[0, L] := \sum_u 1_{\{\tau_0^-(u) = |u| < \tau_L^+(u)\}}, \quad L > 0,
\]

the number of particles (leaves) which touch 0 before $L$; see Figure 2.

The following result may have independent interest: The first two parts give a precise estimate on the probability that a level $t$ is reached by the killed branching random walk. In the third part, conditioning on the event that the level $t$ is reached, we establish the convergence in distribution of the overshoots at level $t$ seen as a random point process.
THEOREM 3. Assume (1.1).

(i) Assuming \( \psi'(q_*) = 0 \) (critical case) and (1.3), we have

\[
P_x(H(t) > 0) \sim \frac{Q[\mathbb{R}^{-1}]}{C_R} R(x)e^{q_* x} e^{-q_* t}, \quad t \to \infty,
\]

where \( Q \) is defined in (5.16), the random variable \( \mathbb{R} \) is given in (6.27) with \( q = q_* \) and \( C_R > 0 \) is a constant given in (5.21).

(ii) Assuming \( \psi'(q_*) < 0 \) (subcritical case) and (1.4), we have

\[
P_x(H(t) > 0) \sim \frac{Q[\mathbb{R}^{-1}]}{C_R} R(x)e^{q_+ x} e^{-q_+ t}, \quad t \to \infty,
\]

where \( Q \) is defined in (5.16), the random variable \( \mathbb{R} \) is given in (6.27) with \( q = q_+ \) and \( C_R > 0 \) is a constant given in (5.21).

(iii) In both cases and under \( P_x(\cdot|H(t) > 0) \), the point process \( \mu_t := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(t)} \delta_{V(u) - t} \) converges in distribution toward a point process \( \hat{\mu}_\infty \) on \((0, \infty)\), where \( \hat{\mu}_\infty \) is distributed as \( \mu_\infty \) under the probability measure \( \frac{\mathbb{R}_\infty^{-1}}{Q[\mathbb{R}^{-1}]} \cdot Q \), with \( \mu_\infty \) defined in (6.26).

The Yaglom-type result of Theorem 3 plays a crucial role in the proof of Theorem 2. Loosely speaking, to make the total progeny \( Z \) (or the set of leaves \( \mathcal{L}[0] \)) as large as possible, the branching walk will reach some level \( L \) as high as possible, and the main contribution to \#\( \mathcal{L}[0] \) comes from the descendants of those particles which have hit \( L \). We control the contribution from the other particles by computing the moments of \( Z[0, L] \) which are the most technical parts in the proof of Theorem 2.

In the computations of moments of \( Z[0, L] \), we have to distinguish the contributions of good particles from bad particles. By good particle, we mean that its children do not make extraordinary jumps [and the number of its children is not
too big; see (7.1) and (8.4) for the precise definitions]. To describe separately the numbers of good and bad particles in $Z[0, L]$, we shall modify the Yaglom-type result Theorem 3(iii) as follows.

Denote by $\Omega_f$ the set of $\sigma$-finite measures on $\mathbb{R}$. For any individual $u \neq \emptyset$, let $\bar{u}$ be the parent of $u$ and define

$$\Delta V(u) := V(u) - V(\bar{u}).$$

Let us fix a measurable function $B: \Omega_f \to \mathbb{R}^+$ and write by a slight abuse of notation

$$B(u) = B\left(\sum_{\tilde{v} = \bar{u}, \tilde{v} \neq u} \delta_{\Delta V(v)}\right) \quad \forall u \in T \setminus \{\emptyset\},$$

and $B(u) = 0$ if $u$ does not have any brothers. We assume some integrability: there exists some $\delta_1 > 0$ such that

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{|u| = 1} (1 + 1_{|\emptyset = \emptyset_+}|V(u)|)e^{\emptyset V(u)} B(u)^{\delta_1}\right] < \infty,$$

where $\emptyset = \emptyset_*$ if $\psi'(\emptyset_*) = 0$ and $\emptyset = \emptyset_+$ if $\psi'(\emptyset_*) < 0$. For the function $B$ appearing in this paper, for instance, $B(\theta) := (\frac{1}{\lambda} \int (1 + e^{\emptyset x})\theta(dx))^2$ in the critical case and $B(\theta) := (\frac{1}{\lambda} \int \theta(dx)(1 + e^{\emptyset - x}))^{1/\emptyset -}$ in the subcritical case (see Sections 7 and 8 where the constant $\lambda$ is introduced) for $\theta \in \Omega_f$, (1.13) will always be a consequence of (1.3) or (1.4) by taking a sufficiently small $\delta_1$.

Define for $u \in T$,

$$(1.14) \quad \beta_L(u) := \inf\{1 \leq j \leq |u|: B(u_j) > e^{L-V(u_j-1)}\}, \quad L > 0,$$

with the convention that $\inf \emptyset = \infty$. We consider

$$\mathcal{K}_B(L) := \{u \in T: \tau^-_0(u) > \tau^+_L(u) = |u|, \beta_L(u) = \infty\}.$$

In other words, $\mathcal{K}_B(L)$ only contains those particles $u$ in $\mathcal{K}(L)$ such that $B(u_j), j \leq |u|$, are not very large. Obviously, $\mathcal{K}_B \equiv \mathcal{K}$ if $B = 0$. We get an extension of Theorem 3(iii) as follows:

**Proposition 1.** Assume (1.13) and the hypothesis of Theorem 3. Under $P_x(\cdot|H(t) > 0)$, the point process $\mu_{B,t} := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{K}(t)} \delta_{V(u)}$ converges in distribution toward a point process $\hat{\mu}_{B,\infty}$ on $(0, \infty)$, where $\hat{\mu}_{B,\infty}$ is distributed as $\mu_{B,\infty}$ under the probability measure $\frac{\mathbb{Q}^{\delta_1}}{\mathbb{Q}[|\emptyset|]} \cdot \mathbb{Q}$, with $\mu_{B,\infty}$ defined in (6.24).

To prove Theorems 2, 3 and Proposition 1, we shall develop a spinal decomposition for the killed branching random walk up to some stopping lines. Viewed from the stopping lines, the branching walk on the spine behaves as a two-dimensional
Markov chain: The first coordinate is a real-valued random walk (sometimes conditioned to stay positive) until some first passage times, and the second coordinate takes values in the space of point measures, whose laws we shall describe through a family of Palm measures. As the parameter of the stopping lines goes to infinity, we shall also need some accurate estimates on the real-valued random walk and establish a convergence in law for the time-reversal random walk, in both transient and recurrent cases.

The rest of this paper is organized as follows:

• Section 2: we explain the main ideas in the proofs of Theorems 2 and 3.
• Section 3: we prove Lemma 2. Then the rest of this paper is devoted to the proofs of Theorems 2, 3, Lemma 1 and Proposition 1.
• Section 4: we collect several preliminary results on the one-dimensional real-valued random walk, both in recurrent and transient cases; in particular, we establish a result of convergence in law for a time reversal random walk. The proofs of these results are postponed in Section 9.
• Section 5: we develop the spinal decompositions for the killed and nonkilled branching random walks, which are the main theoretical tools in the proofs.
• Section 6: by admitting three technical lemmas (whose proofs are postponed in Section 9), we prove Theorem 3 and Proposition 1.
• Sections 7 and 8: based on Theorem 3 and Proposition 1, we prove Theorem 2 in the critical and subcritical cases, respectively. We also prove Lemma 1 in this section.
• Section 9 contains the proofs of the technical lemmas stated in Sections 4 and 6.

Throughout this paper, we adopt the following notation: For a point process \( \Theta = \sum_{i=1}^{m} \delta_{\{x_i\}} \), we write \( \langle f, \Theta \rangle = \sum_{i=1}^{m} f(x_i) \). Unless stated otherwise, we denote by \( c \) or \( c' \) (possibly with some subscript) some unimportant positive constants whose values may change from one paragraph to another, and by \( f(t) \sim g(t) \) as \( t \to t_0 \in [0, \infty) \) if \( \lim_{t \to t_0} \frac{f(t)}{g(t)} = 1 \); We also write \( \mathbb{E}[X, A] \equiv \mathbb{E}[X 1_A] \) when \( A \) is an event and \( \mathbb{E}[X]^k = \mathbb{E}[X^k] \neq (\mathbb{E}[X])^k \) when \( X \) does not have a short expression.

2. Heuristics in the proofs of Theorems 2 and 3. For brevity, we consider \( x = 0 \) in both Theorems 2 and 3.

2.1. Sketch of the proof of Theorem 2. To make \( \#\mathcal{L}[0] \geq n \) very large, the killed branching random walk needs to hit a high level, say \( L \). Recalling (1.10), (1.11) and (1.12), we have

\[
\#\mathcal{L}[0] = Z[0, L] + \sum_{u} 1_{\{\tau_0^-(u) = 0 \}} 1_{\{\tau_0^{+}(u) > \tau_L(u)^+\}}.
\]

Observe that in the above sum over \( u \) (if such \( u \) exists), the particle \( u \) must be a descendant of some \( v \in \mathcal{H}(L) \). Let us order the set of particles in \( \mathcal{H}(L) \) (possibly empty) in an arbitrary way: \( \mathcal{H}(L) = \{v^{(i)} \}, 1 \leq i \leq H(L) \). Denote by \( \#\mathcal{L}^{(i)}[0] \) the
number of descendants of \( v^{(i)} \) which are absorbed at 0 (namely the number of the leaves of the subtree rooted at \( v^{(i)} \)). Then we have

\[
\#L[0] = Z[0, L] + \sum_{i=1}^{H(L)} \#L^{(i)}[0].
\]

The proof of Theorem 2 is divided into three main steps:

1. With a suitable choice of \( L = L(n) \), we show that \( Z[0, L] \) is negligible in the event \( \{\#L[0] > n\} \), which will be a consequence of Lemmas 13 and 14 in the critical case and of Lemmas 19, 20 in the subcritical case. The proof of this fact relies on the computations of the moments of \( Z[0, L] \) by distinguishing the good and the bad particles. A particle is either good or bad; see (7.1) and (8.4) for the precise definitions in both critical and subcritical cases. Roughly saying, a particle is called bad if one of its ancestors makes an extraordinary large jump. The bad particles are few and it is enough to compute the first moment to control their contributions to \( \#L[0] \), whereas for the good particles we need to control their higher moments. The computations of moments are technical and follow from the change of probabilities (spinal decomposition) and the estimates for random walks presented in Section 4.

Let us denote by \( Y_1 \approx Y_2 \) when \( P(Y_1 > n) \sim P(Y_2 > n) \) as \( n \to \infty \), where the probability \( P \) may be \( P \) or \( Q \) whose choice will be fixed in the proof according to the random variable \( Y_1 \) or \( Y_2 \). It follows that

\[
\#L[0] = Z[0, L] + \sum_{i=1}^{H(L)} \#L^{(i)}[0] \approx \sum_{i=1}^{H(L)} \#L^{(i)}[0].
\]

Let \( H_g(L) \) be the number of some subset \( H_g(L) \) of good particles in \( \mathcal{H}(L) \); see (7.19) and (8.20). Denote by \( \{u^{(j)}, 1 \leq j \leq H_g(L)\} \) the set \( \mathcal{H}_g(L) \). For notational brevity we continue to use the notation \( \#L^{(j)}[0] \) for the number of leaves of the subtree rooted at \( u^{(j)} \). Since bad particles in \( \mathcal{H}(L) \) are negligible as those in \( Z[0, L] \), we have

\[
\#L[0] \approx \sum_{i=1}^{H(L)} \#L^{(i)}[0] \approx \sum_{j=1}^{H_g(L)} \#L^{(j)}[0].
\]

2. Let us consider now the critical case. By a linear transform we may assume that \( \rho^* = 1 \). By Nerman [29], on \( \{V(u^{(j)}) = y\} \), \#L^{(j)}[0] is of order \( e^y \) as \( y \to \infty \). More precisely, if we denote by \( B^{(j)} := e^{-V(u^{(j)})}V(u^{(j)})\#L^{(j)}[0] \), then under \( P \), conditioning on \( \{V(u^{(j)}), 1 \leq j \leq H(L)\} \) and letting \( n \to \infty \) [hence \( L = L(n) \to \infty \)], \( B^{(j)} \) converges in law to \( c^* dW_{\infty}^{(j)} \) where \( c^* \) is some positive constant and
\[ \partial W(j)^{\infty}, j \geq 1, \] are independent copies of \( \partial W_{\infty} \), and \( \partial W_{\infty} \) is the limit of the so-called derivative martingale in the critical case. Therefore,

\[ \#\mathcal{L}[0] \approx \sum_{j=1}^{H_{\xi}(L)} \frac{e^{V(u(j))}}{V(u(j))} B(j) \approx c^* \sum_{j=1}^{H_{\xi}(L)} \frac{e^{V(u(j))}}{V(u(j))} \partial W(j)^{\infty}. \]

Remark that \( V(u(j)) \sim L \). By Proposition 1, a modified version of Theorem 3, under \( P \) and conditioning on \( \{H(L) > 0\} \),

\[ H_{\xi}(L) \sum_{j=1}^{H_{\xi}(L)} \frac{e^{V(u(j))}}{V(u(j))} \partial W(j)^{\infty} \sim \frac{e^L}{L} H_{\xi}(L) \sum_{j=1}^{H_{\xi}(L)} e^{V(u(j))} - L \partial W(j)^{\infty} \approx \frac{\hat{c}}{L} \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{c}} e^{x_i} \partial W(i)^{\infty}, \]

where \( \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{c}} \delta_{(x_i)} \) denotes some point process on \((0, \infty)\) defined under \( Q \) and independent of \( (\partial W(i)^{\infty}, i \geq 1) \) which are i.i.d. and are distributed as \( \partial W_{\infty} \) under \( P \). Then by letting \( L = \log n + \log \log n - A \) with a large \( A \),

\[ \hat{c} e^L \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{c}} e^{x_i} \partial W(i)^{\infty} \sim \hat{c} e^{A} \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{c}} e^{x_i} \partial W(i)^{\infty} \]

has a Cauchy-law tail; see Lemma 17. (The point process \( \hat{c} \) may depend on some parameter after the truncation argument.) Then by letting \( A \to \infty \) on the right-hand side of (2.1), we can obtain Theorem 2(i) for the critical case.

(3) The subcritical case in Theorem 2 will be proved in a similar way: By Nereman [29], if we denote by \( B(j) := \#\mathcal{L}[0]e^{-e^{-V(u(j)}} \), then under \( P \), conditioning on \( \{V(u(j)), 1 \leq j \leq H(L)\} \) and letting \( L = L(n) \to \infty \), \( B(j) \) converges in law to \( c^*_{\text{sub}} M_{\infty}^{(\rho - j)} \) where \( c^*_{\text{sub}} \) is some positive constant and \( M_{\infty}^{(\rho - j)}, j \geq 1, \) are independent copies of \( M_{\infty}^{(\rho -)} \), and \( M_{\infty}^{(\rho -)} \) is the limit of some positive martingale and has a power-law tail; see (8.18). As in the critical case, we get that under \( P \) and conditioning on \( \{H(L) > 0\} \),

\[ \#\mathcal{L}[0] \approx \sum_{j=1}^{H_{\xi}(L)} e^{-e^{-V(u(j)}} B(j) \approx c^*_{\text{sub}} e^{-e^{-L}} \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{c}} e^{-x_i} M_{\infty}^{(\rho -)} \]
with some point process \( \sum \hat{\zeta}_i = 1 \delta_{\{x_i\}} \) on \((0, \infty)\) (this point process has of course nothing to do with that in the critical case). Under \( Q \), \( (M(\varrho - i, i)_{i \geq 1}) \) are i.i.d., independent of \( \sum \hat{\zeta}_i = 1 \delta_{\{x_i\}} \) and distributed as \( M(\varrho - \infty, i) \) under \( P \). By Theorem 3(ii), \( P(H(L) > 0) \sim \hat{c}_{\text{sub}} e^{-\varrho - L} \) with some positive constant \( \hat{c}_{\text{sub}} \). Let \( L := \frac{\log n - A}{\varrho} \) with a large \( A > 0 \). It follows that as \( n \to \infty \),

\[
n^{\varrho + / \varrho -} P(\#L[0] > n) \sim n^{\varrho + / \varrho -} Q \left( \left( \frac{\sum \hat{\zeta}_i e^{\varrho - x_i} M(\varrho - \infty, i)}{c_{\text{sub}}^* e^{\varrho - L}} > n \right) P(H(L) > 0) \right)
\]

\[
\sim \hat{c}_{\text{sub}} e^{\varrho + A} Q \left( \left( \frac{\sum \hat{\zeta}_i e^{\varrho - x_i} M(\varrho - \infty, i)}{c_{\text{sub}}^* e^{\varrho - L}} > 1 \right) P(H(L) > 0) \right),
\]

yielding the part (ii) in Theorem 2 by letting \( A \to \infty \).

2.2. Sketch of the proofs of Theorem 3 and Proposition 1. By the spine decomposition (see Proposition 2), the process \( (S_k, k \geq 0) \) formed by the positions of the spine \( (\omega_k, k \geq 0) \) is a random walk under the probability \( Q \). Moreover \( S \) has zero mean in the critical case and positive mean in the subcritical case. Let \( \tau_i^+ := \inf\{k \geq 0 : S_k > t\} \) and denote by \( T_i^+ := S_{\tau_i^+} - t \) the overshoot. Then by the spine decomposition,

\[
\mu_t := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(t)} \delta_{\{V(u) - t\}} = \delta_{\{T_i^+\}} + \sum_{k=1}^{\sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_k} \mu_t^{(u)}},
\]

where \( \mathcal{U}_k \) denotes the set of brothers of \( \omega_k \) at \( k \)th generation [see (5.4)], and the point process \( \mu_t^{(u)} \) is associated to the subtree \( T^{(u)} \) (rooted at \( u \)) of \( T \): \( \mu_t^{(u)} := \sum_{v \in T^{(u)} \cap \mathcal{H}(t)} \delta_{\{V(v) - t\}} \).

Consider a new probability \( Q^+ \) defined in (5.22). Under \( Q^+ \), \( S \) is a random walk conditioned on staying nonnegative. By (5.26), for any \( f \) a nonnegative measurable function,

\[
E[e^{-\langle f, \mu_t \rangle} 1_{H(t) > 0}] = Q^+ \left[ \frac{e^{-\langle f, \mu_t \rangle}}{M_{\varrho_t}^*} \right] \sim \frac{1}{C_R \varrho(t)} e^{-\varrho t} Q^+ \left[ \frac{e^{-\langle f, \mu_t \rangle}}{\int_{\mathbb{R}} e^{\varrho z} \mu_t(dz)} \right],
\]

\( t \to \infty \),

where \( C_R \) denotes some positive constant and \( \varrho(t) \) and \( \varrho \) are given in (6.4). Therefore to prove Theorem 3, it is enough to check the convergence in law of the point process \( \mu_t \) under \( Q^+ \).

To this end, we first check that in the sum \( \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_i^+} \) in (2.2), only those terms with \( k \) near to \( \tau_i^+ \) contribute (see Lemma 9 for the precise statement), and that we may replace \( \mu_t^{(u)} \) by \( \tilde{\mu}_t^{(u)} \) a point process defined by some branching random
walk starting from $V(u)$ without killing at 0; see Lemma 10. The by using the convergence in law (Lemma 4) for the time reversal random walk combined with the overshoot $\{T^+_t, S^+_t - S^+_{t-k}, 1 \leq k \leq t^+_t\}$, we can obtain the convergence of $\mu_t$ under $Q^+$ and prove Theorem 3. Proposition 1 will be proved in a similar way.

3. From the number of leaves to the total progeny of the killed branching walk: Proof of Lemma 2. We recall that our branching random walk starts from $x \geq 0$. We introduced for $u \in T$, $\tau_a(u) := \inf\{0 \leq k \leq |u| : V(u_k) < a\}$ and

$$L(a) := \{u \in T : |u| = \tau_a(u), a \leq x\}.$$ 

**Proof of Lemma 2.** We equip the tree $T$ with the lexicographical order. Let $U_k$ be the $k$th vertex for this order in the set $L^c$ of the living particles. It is well defined until $k = Z$ when all living particles have been explored. For $k \in [1, Z]$, we introduce

$$Y_k := 1 + \sum_{i=1}^{k} (v(U_i) - 1),$$

and we notice that $Y_Z = \#L[0]$. (This can be easily checked by using an argument of recurrence on the maximal generation of the individuals of $L^c$.) We extend the definition of $Y_k$ to $k > Z$, by $Y_{k+1} := Y_k + v_k - 1$ where $v_k$ is taken from a family $\{v_i, i \geq 1\}$ of i.i.d. random variables distributed as $v(\emptyset)$ and independent of our branching random walk. We claim that $(Y_k, k \geq 1)$ is a random walk. To see this, observe that we can construct the killed branching random walk in the following way. Let $(L_i^{(c)}, i \geq 1)$ be i.i.d. copies of $L$. At step 1, the root $\emptyset =: U_1$ located at $x$ generates the point process $L_1^{(c)}$. If all the children are killed, we stop the construction. Otherwise, we call $U_2$ the first vertex for the lexicographical order that is alive. Then, $U_2$ generates the point process $L_2^{(c)}$, and we continue similarly. The process that we get has the law of the killed branching random walk. In particular, if $v_i^{(c)}$ denotes the number of points of $L_i^{(c)}$, then $(Y_k, k \geq 1)$ has the law of $(\sum_{i=1}^{k} (v_i^{(c)} - 1), k \geq 1)$ which is a random walk by construction. This proves the claim. We suppose that Theorem 2 holds and we want to deduce Theorem 1. Let us look at the upper bound of $P_x(Z > n)$. Let $m := E[v] > 1$ and take $\varepsilon \in (0, m-1)$. We have

$$P_x(\#L[0] \leq (m-1-\varepsilon)n, Z > n) = P_x(Y_Z \leq (m-1-\varepsilon)n, Z > n)$$

$$= \sum_{k>n} P_x(Y_k \leq (m-1-\varepsilon)n, Z = k)$$

$$\leq \sum_{k>n} P_x(Y_k \leq (m-1-\varepsilon)k).$$
which is exponentially small by Cramér’s bound. By Theorem 2, 
\( \mathbb{P}_x(\#L[0] > n) \) decreases polynomially. Therefore,

\[
\mathbb{P}_x(Z > n) \leq \mathbb{P}_x(\#L[0] > (m - 1 - \varepsilon)n) + \mathbb{P}_x(\#L[0] \leq (m - 1 - \varepsilon)n, Z > n) \\
= \mathbb{P}_x(\#L[0] > (m - 1 - \varepsilon)n)(1 + o(1)).
\]

Letting \( n \) go to \( \infty \), then \( \varepsilon \to 0 \) yields the upper bound. For the lower bound, we take \( \varepsilon > 0 \), and we observe that

\[
\mathbb{P}_x(\#L[0] > (m - 1 + \varepsilon)n, Z \leq n) = \mathbb{P}_x(Y_Z > (m - 1 + \varepsilon)n, Z \leq n) \\
\leq \mathbb{P}_x(\max_{1 \leq k \leq n} (Y_k - (m - 1)k) > \varepsilon n).
\]

Let \( \alpha > 2 \) in the critical case and \( \alpha > 2\rho_+/\rho_- \) in the subcritical case. By Doob’s \( L^p \)-inequality,

\[
\mathbb{E} \left| \max_{1 \leq k \leq n} (Y_k - (m - 1)k) \right|^\alpha \leq \frac{\alpha^\alpha}{(\alpha - 1)^\alpha} \mathbb{E} \left| (Y_n - (m - 1)n) \right|^\alpha,
\]

which according to Theorem 2.10 in Petrov [31], page 62, is less than

\[
c(\alpha)n^{\alpha/2 - 1} \mathbb{E} \sum_{i=1}^{n} |v_i - m|^\alpha = c(\alpha)n^{\alpha/2} \mathbb{E}|v - m|^\alpha,
\]

with some constant \( c(\alpha) > 0 \). It follows that

\[
\mathbb{P}_x(\#L[0] > (m - 1 + \varepsilon)n, Z \leq n) \leq \frac{c(\alpha)\mathbb{E}|v - m|^\alpha}{\varepsilon^\alpha} n^{-\alpha/2}.
\]

Therefore,

\[
\mathbb{P}_x(Z > n) \geq \mathbb{P}_x(\#L[0] > (m - 1 + \varepsilon)n) - \frac{c(\alpha)\mathbb{E}|v - m|^\alpha}{\varepsilon^\alpha} n^{-\alpha/2},
\]

which proves the lower bound by taking \( n \to \infty \) then \( \varepsilon \to 0 \).

\[ \square \]

4. One-dimensional real-valued random walks. In this section we collect some preliminary results for a one-dimensional random walk \((S_n)_{n \geq 0}\) on some probability space \((\Omega, \mathcal{F}, \mathbb{P})\). Most of the results in this section will be applied to the random walk \( S \) defined in (5.17) under \( \mathbb{Q} \) in Section 5. For the sake of clarity of presentation, the technical proofs are postponed to Section 9.

4.1. Time-reversal random walks. Let \((S_n, \mathbb{P}_x)\) be a real-valued random walk starting from \( x \in \mathbb{R} \). We write \( \mathbb{P} = \mathbb{P}_0 \). Assume that \( \mathbb{E}|S_1| \geq 0 \) and \( \mathbb{E}|S_1|^{3+\delta} < \infty \) for some \( \delta > 0 \). In words, we consider random walks that do not drift to \(-\infty\). Moreover we assume that the distribution of \( S_1 \) is nonarithmetic. Define

\[
\tau^+_a := \inf\{k \geq 0 : S_k > a\}, \quad \tau^-_a := \inf\{k \geq 0 : S_k < a\},
\]

\[ (4.1) \]
and the overshoot/undershoot
\[ T^+_a := S_{t^+_a} - a > 0, \quad T^-_a := a - S_{t^-_a} > 0. \]

Let \( R(\cdot) \) be the renewal function of \((S_n)_{n \geq 0}\) under \( \mathbb{P} \), that is, with \( \tau^* := \inf\{j \geq 1 : S_j \geq 0\} \),
\[
R(x) := \mathbb{E} \left[ \sum_{j=0}^{\tau^*-1} 1_{\{ -x \leq S_j \}} \right] \quad \forall x > 0,
\]
and \( R(0) = 1 \).

Following [6], we introduce the law of the random walk conditioned to stay nonnegative. To this aim, we see \((S_n)_{n \geq 0}\) under \( \mathbb{P}_x \) as a Markov chain with transition function \( \mu(y, dz) := \mathbb{P}(y + S_1 \in dz) \). We denote by \( \mathbb{P}_x^+ \) the \( h \)-transform of \( \mathbb{P}_x \) by the function \( R \). That is, \( \mathbb{P}_x^+ \) is a probability measure under which \((S_n)_{n \geq 0}\) is a homogeneous Markov chain on the nonnegative real numbers, with transition function
\[
\mu_R(y, dz) := \frac{R(z)}{R(y)} \mu(y, dz), \quad y, z \geq 0.
\]

It is well known that \( \mathbb{P}_x^+ \)-almost surely \( S_n \to \infty \) when \( n \to \infty \). When \((S_n)_{n \geq 0}\) drifts to \( \infty \) (i.e., when \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] > 0 \)), \( \mathbb{P}_x^+ \) is the law of the random walk conditioned to stay nonnegative in the usual sense, that is, \( \mathbb{P}_x^+(\cdot) = \mathbb{P}(\cdot | S_1 \geq 0, \ldots, S_n \geq 0, \ldots) \).

We denote by \((\sigma_n, H_n)_{n \geq 0}\) the strict ascending ladder epochs and ladder heights of \( S \) defined by \((\sigma_0, H_0) = (0, 0)\) and otherwise for \( n \geq 1 \) by
\[
\sigma_n := \begin{cases} 
\min\{k > \sigma_{n-1} : S_k > H_{n-1}\}, & \text{if } \sigma_{n-1} < \infty, \\
\infty, & \text{if } \sigma_{n-1} = \infty
\end{cases}
\]
and
\[
H_n := \begin{cases} 
S_{\sigma_n}, & \text{if } \sigma_n < \infty, \\
\infty, & \text{if } \sigma_n = \infty
\end{cases}
\]

Some results from random walk theory are important in the proofs presented here and recorded in the following lemma.

**Lemma 3.** Assume that \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] \geq 0, \mathbb{E}[|S_1|^{3+\delta}] < \infty \) for some \( \delta > 0 \) and that the distribution of \( S_1 \) is nonarithmetic. Then:

(i) \( T^+_t \) converges in law to a finite random variable when \( t \to \infty \).
(ii) \((T^+_t, t \geq 0)\) is bounded in \( L_p \) for all \( 1 < p < 1 + \delta \).
(iii) \( S_{T^+_t}/t \) converges in probability to 1 when \( t \to \infty \).
(iv) If \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] = 0 \), there exists a constant \( C_R \in (0, \infty) \) such that \( R(x)/x \to C_R \) when \( x \to \infty \). In this case, \( C_R = \frac{1}{\mathbb{E}[T_0]} = \frac{1}{\mathbb{E}[-S_{T^-_0}]} \).
   - If \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] > 0 \), there exists a constant \( C_R \in (0, \infty) \) such that \( R(x) \to C_R \) when \( x \to \infty \). In this case, \( C_R = \frac{1}{\mathbb{P}(T_0 = \infty)} \).
(v) \( \bullet \) If \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] = 0 \), then \( \mathbb{P}(\tau_{t+} < \tau_0^-) \sim \frac{1}{C_R t^{2+\delta}} \) when \( t \to \infty \).
\( \bullet \) If \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] > 0 \), then \( \mathbb{P}(\tau_{t+} < \tau_0^-) \to \frac{1}{C_R} \) when \( t \to \infty \).

Proof. Notice that \( \tau_{t+} \) is also the overshoot of the random walk \((H_n)\) above the level \( t \). In the case \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] = 0 \), Doney [12] implies that \( H_1 \) has a finite \( (2+\delta) \)-moment which in view of Lorden [25], Theorem 3, applied to \((H_n)\), implies that \( (T_{t+}, t \geq 0) \) is bounded in \( L^p \) for all \( 1 < p < 1 + \delta \). In the case \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] > 0 \), again by Lorden [25], Theorem 3, applied to \((S_n)\), \( (T_{t+}, t \geq 0) \) is bounded in \( L^p \) for all \( 1 < p < 2 + \delta \). This provides Part (ii) of the lemma. Moreover, we see that in both cases, \( H_1 = T_0^+ \) has a finite expectation and obviously is nonarithmetic, then a refinement of the renewal theorem gives part (i) of the lemma (Feller [13], page 370, equation (4.10)). For both cases, part (iii) is a consequence of part (ii).

To show (iv), we recall the duality lemma (Feller [13], page 395),

\[ R(x) = 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{P}(H_n^- \leq x), \quad x > 0, \]

where \((H_n^-, n \geq 0)\) denotes the (strict) ascending ladder heights of \(-S\) (in particular, \( H_1^- = T_0^- \) the undershoot at 0). In the case \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] = 0 \), part (iv) is a consequence of the renewal theorem (see Feller [13], page 360) with \( C_R = \frac{1}{\mathbb{E}[T_0^-]} \), while part (v) is obtained by applying the optional stopping theorem to the martingale \((S_k)_0 \leq k \leq \tau_{t+} \wedge \tau_0^-) \) (the uniform integrability is guaranteed by (ii); see [3], Lemma 2.2). In the case \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] > 0 \), parts (iv) and (v) follow from the duality lemma, \( C_R = \mathbb{E}[\tau^+^x] = \lim_{x \to \infty} R(x) = 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{P}(H_n^- < \infty) = 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{P}(\tau_0^- < \infty)^n = \frac{1}{\mathbb{P}(\tau_0^- = \infty)}. \)

We recall now Tanaka’s construction (see [33] and Figure 3) of the random walk conditioned to stay positive. Let us recall that \((\sigma_n, H_n)_{n \geq 0}\) are the strict ascending ladder epochs and ladder heights of \( S \), and let \((w_i)_{i \geq 1}\) be independent copies of

Fig. 3. Tanaka’s construction.
the segment of the random walk $(S_n)_{n \geq 0}$ up to time $\sigma := \sigma_1$ viewed from $(\sigma, S_\sigma)$ in reversed time and reflected in the $y$-axis; that is, $(w_i)_{i \geq 0}$ are independent copies of
\[(0, S_{\sigma} - S_{\sigma - 1}, S_{\sigma} - S_{\sigma - 2}, \ldots, S_{\sigma} - S_1, S_{\sigma}).\]
We write now $w_i = (w_i(\ell); \ell = 0, 1, 2, \ldots, \sigma(i))$ to identify the components of $w_i$.
In [33], Tanaka shows that the random walk conditioned to stay positive can be constructed by gluing the $w_i$’s together, each starting from the end of the previous one. More formally, let $(\sigma_n^+, H_n^+)_{n \geq 1}$ be the renewal process formed from the independent random variables $(\sigma(i), w_i(\sigma(i)))$, that is,
\[\begin{equation}
(\sigma_n^+, H_n^+) = (\sigma(1) + \cdots + \sigma(n), w_1(\sigma(1)) + \cdots + w_n(\sigma(n))), \quad n \geq 1.
\end{equation}\]
Then, Tanaka’s result says that the random walk conditioned to stay positive can be constructed via the process $(\zeta_n)_{n \geq 0}$ given by
\[\zeta_n = H_k^+ + w_{k+1}(n - \sigma_k^+), \quad \sigma_k^+ < n \leq \sigma_{k+1}^+.
\]
Finally we introduce a process $(\hat{S}_n)_{n \geq 0}$ (obtained by modifying slightly the random walk conditioned to stay positive) which will be the limit process that appears in the following lemma. Let $\bar{\sigma} := \sup\{n \geq 1 : \zeta_n = \min_{1 \leq i \leq n} \zeta_i\}$ and observe that $\bar{\sigma}$ is almost surely finite since $\zeta_n \to \infty$. Then $(\hat{S}_n)_{n \geq 0}$ is defined by
\[\begin{equation}
\mathbb{E}[F((\hat{S}_n)_{n \geq 0})] = \frac{1}{\mathbb{E}[H_1]} \mathbb{E}[\zeta_{\hat{\sigma}} F((\zeta_n)_{n \geq 0})]
\end{equation}\]
for any test function $F$. Observe that Tanaka’s construction implies $\mathbb{E}[\zeta_{\hat{\sigma}}] = \mathbb{E}[H_1]$. Moreover we introduce $\hat{\sigma} := \sup\{n \geq 1 : \hat{S}_n = \min_{1 \leq i \leq n} \hat{S}_i\}$ which is almost surely finite since $\hat{S}_n \to \infty$.

**Lemma 4.** Assume that $\mathbb{E}[S_1] \geq 0$, $\mathbb{E}[|S_1|^{3+\delta}] < \infty$ for some $\delta > 0$ and that the distribution of $S_1$ is nonarithmetic. Recall (4.1), and fix an arbitrary integer $K \geq 1$. Let $F : \mathbb{R}_+^* \times \mathbb{R}_+^K \to \mathbb{R}$ be a bounded and measurable function. Suppose that for any $z \in \mathbb{R}_+^K$, the set $\{x \in \mathbb{R}_+^* : F(\cdot, z) \text{ is not continuous at } x\}$ is at most countable [which may depend on $z$]. Then
\[\lim_{t \to \infty} \mathbb{E}[F(T_t^+,(S_{t_j^+} - S_{t_j^+ - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})|\tau_t^+ > K] = \mathbb{E}[F(U \hat{S}_{\hat{\sigma}}, (\hat{S}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})],\]
where $(\hat{S}_n)_{n \geq 0}$ is the process defined by (4.6) and $U$ is a uniform random variable on $[0, 1]$ independent of $(\hat{S}_n)_{n \geq 0}$.

(ii)
\[\lim_{t \to \infty} \mathbb{E}^+[F(T_t^+,(S_{t_j^+} - S_{t_j^+ - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})|\tau_t^+ > K] = \mathbb{E}[F(U \hat{S}_{\hat{\sigma}}, (\hat{S}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})],\]
where $\mathbb{E}^+$ denotes the expectation with respect to the probability measure $\mathbb{P}^+$. 
As a consequence, under $\mathbb{P}(\cdot | \tau_t^+ > K)$ or under $\mathbb{P}^+ (\cdot | \tau_t^+ > K)$, the random vector $(T_t^+, (S_{\tau_t^+} - S_{\tau_t^+ - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})$ converges in distribution toward $(U \hat{S}_\delta, (\hat{S}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})$ when $t \to \infty$. We also note that the conditioning with respect to the event $\{\tau_t^+ > K\}$ is just technical since this event is asymptotically typical (indeed almost surely $\tau_t^+ \to \infty$ when $t \to \infty$).

**Proof of Lemma 4.** See Section 9. □

We end this subsection with an estimate on a random walk with positive drift:

**Lemma 5.** Assume that $\mathbb{E}[S_1] > 0$, $\mathbb{E}[S_1^2] < \infty$. Let $(a_i, S_i - S_{i-1})_{i \geq 1}$ be an i.i.d. sequence such that $a_i \geq 0$ almost surely. For any $p \geq 1$ such that $\mathbb{E}[a_i^p] < \infty$ and for any $\kappa > 0$, there exists some constant $c_{p,\kappa} > 0$ such that

$$
\mathbb{E}_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau_t^+ - 1} a_{k+1} e^{\kappa (S_k - t)} \right]^p \leq c_{p,\kappa} \quad \forall t > 0, \forall x \leq t.
$$

(4.7)

**Proof.** See Section 9. □

4.2. Centered random walks. Let $((S_n)_{n \geq 0}, \mathbb{P}_x)$ be a real-valued random walk starting from $x \in \mathbb{R}$. We write $\mathbb{P} = \mathbb{P}_0$. Assume that

$$
\mathbb{E}[S_1] = 0, \quad \text{Var}(S_1) > 0, \quad \mathbb{E}[e^{uS_1}] < \infty \quad \forall u \in (-1 + \eta, \eta)
$$

(4.8)

for some $\eta > 0$. Recall that $\mathbb{P}(\tau_L^+ < \tau_0^-)$ is of order $\frac{1}{L}$ as $L \to \infty$ (cf. Lemma 3). For $a \in \mathbb{R}$, recall that $T_a^+ := S_{\tau_a^+} - a > 0$ (resp., $T_a^- := a - S_{\tau_a^-} > 0$) denotes the overshoot (resp., undershoot) at level $a$.

We have the following estimate.

**Lemma 6.** Under (4.8). For any $0 < \delta < \eta$, there exist some constants $c > 1$ and $c' = c'(\delta) > 1$ such that for all $b \geq a \in \mathbb{R}$ and $x > 0$,

$$
\mathbb{P}_a(T_b^+ > x) \leq c' e^{-\delta x},
$$

(4.9)

$$
\mathbb{P}_b(T_a^- > x) \leq c' e^{-(1+\delta)x}.
$$

(4.10)

Moreover, for all $L \geq 1$, $0 \leq a \leq L$,

$$
\mathbb{P}_a(\tau_L^- < \tau_L^+) \leq \frac{L - a + c}{L},
$$

(4.11)

$$
\mathbb{P}_a(\tau_0^- > \tau_L^+) \leq \frac{a + c}{L},
$$

(4.12)

$$
\mathbb{E}_a [e^{-S_{\tau_0^-}} 1_{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+}] \leq c \frac{L - a + 1}{L},
$$

(4.13)
\[
\begin{align*}
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ \sum_{j=0}^{\tau^+_L-1} e^{-\delta(L-S_j)} \right] + \mathbb{E}_a \left[ \sum_{j=0}^{\tau^-_0-1} e^{-\delta S_j} \right] & \leq c', \\
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ \sum_{0 \leq j < \tau^-_0 \land \tau^+_L} e^{-\delta S_j} \right] & \leq c', \\
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ \sum_{0 \leq j < \tau^-_0 \land \tau^+_L} e^{-\delta(L-S_j)} \right] & \leq c'.
\end{align*}
\]

Remark. A weaker assumption \( \sup_{-\eta \leq u \leq \eta} \mathbb{E}[e^{u S_1}] < \infty \) is enough to get (4.14), (4.15), (4.16) and (4.17).

Proof of Lemma 6. See Section 9. \( \square \)

4.3. Random walks with negative drift. In this subsection, we give estimates on transient random walks. We take again \((S_n)_{n \geq 0}, \mathbb{P}_x)\) a random walk, but we suppose now that \(\mathbb{E}[S_1] < 0\), hence the random walk drifts to \(-\infty\). We suppose that there exist \(\gamma, \eta_1, \eta_2 > 0\) such that
\[
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ e^{\gamma S_1} \right] = 1, \quad \mathbb{E}_a \left[ e^{u S_1} \right] < \infty \quad \forall u \in (-\eta_1, \gamma + \eta_2).
\]
Then
\[
\mathbb{P}(\tau^-_0 < \tau^+_0) \rightarrow \mathbb{P}(\tau^+_0 = \infty) > 0, \quad a \rightarrow -\infty.
\]
By Theorem 1 of [17], if \(S_1\) is nonarithmetic, then
\[
\mathbb{P}(\tau^+_a < \tau^-_0) \sim c(\gamma)e^{-\gamma a}, \quad a \rightarrow +\infty
\]
for some constant \(c(\gamma) > 0\). We end this section with two lemmas:

Lemma 7. Under (4.19). For any \(r > 0\), we can find some positive constants \(c, c', c''\) such that for any \(a \geq 0, L > 1\),
\[
\begin{align*}
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ e^{-r S^-_0} \right] & \leq c(r), \quad \text{if } r < \eta_1, \\
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ \sum_{0 \leq \ell < \tau^+_L} (1 + L - S_\ell)^\alpha e^{r S_\ell} \right] & \leq c'(r, \alpha) e^{\gamma(a-L)} e^{r L}, \quad \text{if } r > \gamma, \alpha \geq 0.
\end{align*}
\]
\( \mathbb{E}_a \left[ \min(\tau_0, \tau_L^+) \sum_{\ell=0} (1 + L - S_{\ell})^\alpha e^{\gamma S_{\ell}} \right] \leq c'' e^{\gamma a} (1 + L - a)^{1+\alpha}, \)  
(4.24)  
\( a \in [0, L], \alpha \geq 0. \)

**Proof.** See Section 9. \( \square \)

**Lemma 8.** Under (4.19). Fix some \( 0 \leq \eta < \eta_1 \) and \( \alpha \geq 0. \) Assume that \( (S_n - S_{n-1}, a_n)_{n \geq 1} \) are i.i.d. with \( a_1 \geq 0 \) almost surely.

(i) Assume \( b > 0, 0 \leq p < \gamma/b \) and \( a_1 \) are such that \( \mathbb{E}[ (1 + 1_{[S_1 < 0]} e^{-\eta S_1}) \times a_1^p ] < \infty. \) There exists some constant \( c_p = c_p(b, \eta, \alpha) > 0 \) such that for all \( x \geq 0, \)

\( \mathbb{E}_x \left[ e^{-\eta S_0^+} \left( \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_0} e^{b S_{\ell-1} a_\ell} \right)^p \right] \leq c_p e^{bp x}. \)

(4.25)

(ii) Assume \( b > 0, p \geq 1 \) and \( a_1 \) are such that \( \mathbb{E}[ (1 + 1_{[S_1 < 0]} e^{-\eta S_1}) a_1^p ] < \infty \) and \( \mathbb{E}[ e^{p b S_1^+} ] < \infty. \) There exists some constant \( c_p = c_p(b, \eta, \alpha) > 0 \) such that for all \( L > 0 \) and \( 0 \leq x \leq L, \)

\( \mathbb{E}_x \left[ e^{-\eta S_0^+} \left( \sum_{\ell=1}^{\min(\tau_0, \tau_L^+)} (1 + L - S_{\ell-1})^\alpha e^{b S_{\ell-1} a_\ell} \right)^p \right] \leq c_p \times \begin{cases} (1 + L - x)^{\alpha p} e^{p b x}, & \text{if } p < \gamma/b, \\ e^{\gamma x} (1 + L - x)^{1+\alpha p}, & \text{if } p = \gamma/b, \\ e^{\gamma(x-L) + p b L}, & \text{if } p > \gamma/b. \end{cases} \)

(4.26)

**Proof.** See Section 9. \( \square \)

5. Spinal decomposition.

5.1. Spinal decomposition of a branching random walk (without killing). We begin with a general formalism of the spinal decomposition for a branching random walk. This decomposition has already been used in the literature by many authors in various forms; see, for example, Lyons, Pemantle and Peres [27], Lyons [26] and Biggins and Kyprianou [9].

There is a one-to-one correspondence between the branching random walk \( (V(u)_{u \in T}) \) and a marked tree \( \{(u, V(u)) : u \in T\}. \) For \( n \geq 1, \) let \( \mathcal{F}_n \) be the sigma-algebra generated by the branching random walk in the first \( n \) generations. For any \( u \in T \setminus \{ \emptyset \}, \) denote by \( \overline{u} \) the parent of \( u. \) Write as before \( \emptyset, u = \{ u_0 := \emptyset, u_1, \ldots, u_{|u|} \} \) the shortest path from the root \( \emptyset \) to \( u (\text{with } |u_i| = i \text{ for any } 0 \leq i \leq |u|). \)
Let $h : T \to [0, \infty)$ be measurable such that $h(\emptyset) > 0$ and for any $x \in \mathbb{R}$, $v \in T$ with $|v| = n \geq 0$,

$$E_x \left[ \sum_{u = v} h(u) \bigg| \mathcal{F}_n \right] = \lambda h(v),$$

(5.1)

where $\lambda > 0$ is some positive constant. Let $\mathcal{H}_+ := \{u \in T : h(u) > 0\}$. In our examples of $h$ in this paper, $\lambda = 1$, $h(u) = f(V(u))$ or $h(u) = f(V(u_1), \ldots, V(u_{|u|}))$ for some nonrandom function $f$, and $\mathcal{H}_+$ equals either $T$ or $\mathcal{L}$ the set of progeny of the killed branching walk.

Define $W_n := \frac{1}{h(\emptyset)\lambda^n} \sum_{|u| = n} h(u), \quad n \geq 0$.

Fix $x \in \mathbb{R}$. Clearly by (5.1), $(W_n)$ is a $(P_x, (\mathcal{F}_n))$-martingale.

On the enlarged probability space formed by marked trees with distinguished rays, we may construct a probability $Q_x^{(h)}$ and an infinite ray $\{w_0 = \emptyset, w_1, w_2, \ldots\}$ such that for any $n \geq 1$, $w_n = w_{n-1}$, and

$$Q_x^{(h)}(w_n = u | \mathcal{F}_n) = \frac{h(u)}{h(\emptyset)\lambda^n W_n} \forall |u| = n$$

and

$$\frac{dQ_x^{(h)}}{dP_x} \bigg|_{\mathcal{F}_n} = W_n.$$  

(5.2) 

(5.3)

To construct $Q_x^{(h)}$, we follow Lyons [26] under a slightly more general framework: Let $\mathcal{L} := \sum_{|u| = 1} \delta_{V(u)}$. For any $y \in \mathcal{H}_+$, denote by $\tilde{\mathcal{L}}_y$ a random variable whose law has the Radon–Nikodym density $W_1$ with respect to the law of $\mathcal{L}$ under $P_y$. Put one particle $w_0 = \emptyset$ at $x \in \mathcal{H}_+$. Generate offsprings and displacements according to an independent copy of $\tilde{\mathcal{L}}_y$. Let $\{|u| = 1\}$ be the set of the children of $w_0$. We choose $w_1 = u$ according to the probability $\frac{h(u)}{h(\emptyset)\lambda W_1}$. All children $u \neq w_1$ give rise to independent branching random walks of law $P_{V(u)}$, while conditioned on $V(w_1) = y$, $w_1$ gives offsprings and displacements according to an independent copy of $\tilde{\mathcal{L}}_y$. We choose $w_2$ among the children of $w_1$ in the same size-biased way, and so on. Denote by $Q_x^{(h)}$ the joint law of the marked tree $(V(u))_{|u| \geq 0}$ and the infinite ray $\{w_0 = \emptyset, w_1, \ldots, w_n, \ldots\}$. Then $Q_x^{(h)}$ satisfies (5.3) and (5.2), which can be checked in the same way as in Lyons [26].

Under $Q_x^{(h)}$, we write, for $k \geq 1$,

$$\bar{\mathcal{O}}_k := \{u : |u| = k, \bar{u} = w_{k-1}, u \neq w_k\}.$$ 

(5.4)
In words, $\mathcal{O}_k$ is the set of children of $w_{k-1}$ except $w_k$, or equivalently, the set of the brothers of $w_k$, and is possibly empty. Define $S_0 := V(\emptyset)$ and

$$S_n := V(w_n), \quad \Theta_n := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{O}_n} \delta_{\{\Delta V(u)\}}, \quad n \geq 1,$$

where we recall that $\Delta V(u) := V(u) - \hat{V}(u)$. Finally, let us introduce the following sigma-field:

$$\mathcal{G}_n := \sigma\{(\Delta V(u), u \in \mathcal{O}_k), V(w_k), w_k, \mathcal{O}_k, 1 \leq k \leq n\}.$$

Then $\mathcal{G}_\infty$ is the sigma-field generated by all random variables related to the spine $\{w_k, k \geq 0\}$. Let us write $v < u$ if $v$ is an ancestor of $u$ (then $v \leq u$ if $v < u$ or $v = u$). By the standard “words”-representation in a tree, $u < v$ if and only if the word $v$ is a concatenation of the word $u$ with some word $s$, namely $v = us$ with $|s| \geq 1$.

The promised spinal decomposition is as follows. Since it differs only slightly from the spinal decomposition presented in Lyons [26] and Biggins and Kyprianou [9], we feel free to omit the proof.

**Proposition 2.** Assume (5.1) and fix $x \in \mathcal{H}_+$. Under probability $Q_x^{(h)}$:

(i) for each $n \geq 1$, conditionally on $\mathcal{G}_{n-1}$ and on $\{S_{n-1} = y\}$, the point process $(V(u), \hat{v} = w_{n-1})$ is distributed as $\hat{\mathcal{Z}}_y$. In particular, the process $(S_n, \Theta_n)_{n \geq 0}$ is Markovian. Moreover, $(S_n)_{n \geq 0}$ is also a Markov chain and satisfies

$$Q_x^{(h)}(f(S_n)|S_{n-1} = y, \mathcal{G}_{n-1}) = \frac{1}{\lambda} E_y\left[\sum_{|u| = 1} f(V(u)) \frac{h(u)}{h(\emptyset)}\right]$$

for any nonnegative measurable function $f$, $n \geq 1$ and $y \in \mathcal{H}_+$.

(ii) Conditionally on $\mathcal{G}_\infty$, the shifted branching random walks $\{V(vu) - V(v)\}_{|u| \geq 0}$, for all $v \in \bigcup_{k=1}^{\infty} \mathcal{O}_k$, are independent, and have the same law as $\{V(u)\}_{|u| \geq 0}$ under $P_0$.

Remark that under $Q_x^{(h)}$, $\{w_n, n \geq 0\}$ lives in $\mathcal{H}_+$ with probability one. We can extend Proposition 2 to the so-called stopping lines. Recall (1.6) and (1.7). For $0 \leq x < t$, we consider the stopping line

$$\mathcal{C}_t := \{u \in T: \tau_t^+(u) = |u|\}.$$

Note that for any $v \in T$, $|v| < \tau_t^+(v)$ means that $\sup_{0 \leq i \leq |v|} V(v_i) \leq t$; see Figure 4. The process $\{V(u)\}_{|u| \leq \tau_t^+(u)}$ can be interpreted as the branching random walk stopped by the line $\mathcal{C}_t$. Recalling (1.11), we remark that $\mathcal{C}_t \cap \mathcal{Z} = \mathcal{H}(t)$, where as before $\mathcal{Z}$ denotes the set of progeny of the killed branching random walk.
Let $F_{C_t} := \sigma \{ (u, V(u)) : u \in T, |u| \leq \tau_t^+(u) \}$ be the $\sigma$-field generated by the branching walk $V$ up to the stopping line $C_t$. Assuming (5.1), we define

$$W_{C_t} := \frac{1}{h(\emptyset)} \sum_{u \in C_t} h(u) \lambda^{-|u|}. $$

Define two families of stopping times for the process $(S_n := V(w_n), n \geq 0)$ under $Q_x(h)$,

$$\tau^+_a := \inf \{ k \geq 0 : S_k > a \}, \quad \tau^-_a := \inf \{ k \geq 0 : S_k < a \} \quad \forall a \in \mathbb{R},$$

with the usual convention $\inf \emptyset = \infty$ and the corresponding overshoot and undershoot processes

$$T^+_a := S_{\tau^+_a} - a, \quad T^-_a := a - S_{\tau^-_a} \quad \forall a \in \mathbb{R}.$$  

Analogously to (5.6), we introduce the sigma-field

$$G_{C_t} := \sigma \{ (\Delta V(u), u \in \bar{T}_k, V(w_k), w_k, \bar{T}_k, 1 \leq k \leq \tau_t^+, \tau_t^+) \},$$

generated by all information related to the spine $[\emptyset, w(\tau_t^+)]$. Similarly, we recall $L[a]$ in (1.8) and define $\mathcal{F}_{L[a]}, W_{L[a]}, G_{L[a]}$ as before. The next result describes the decomposition along the spine $[\emptyset, w(\tau_t^+)]$ (resp., $[\emptyset, w(\tau^-_t)]$).

**Proposition 3.** Assume (5.1), and let $x \in \mathcal{H}_+$. Take $t \geq x$. Suppose that $h$ is such that $Q_x^{(h)}(\tau_t^+ < \infty) = 1$. Then

$$\frac{dQ_x^{(h)}}{dP_x} \big|_{\mathcal{F}_{C_t}} = W_{C_t}.$$
(i) Under probability $Q^{(h)}_{x}$, conditionally on $\mathcal{F}_{t}$ and on $\{V(v) = x_{v}, v \in \bigcup_{k=1}^{t+} \hat{\mathcal{D}}_{k}\}$, the shifted branching random walks $\{V(vu) - V(v)\}_{u:|vu| \leq \tau_{t+}^{+}(vu)}$, stopped by the line $\mathcal{C}_{t}$, are independent, and have the same law as $\{V(u)\}_{|u| \leq \tau_{t+}^{+}(u)}$ under $\mathbf{P}_{0}$, stopped by the line $\mathcal{C}_{t-x_{v}}$.

(ii) The distribution of the spine within $\mathcal{C}_{t}$ is given by

$$Q^{(h)}_{x}(w_{\tau_{t+}+} = u | \mathcal{F}_{t}) = \frac{h(u)\lambda^{-|u|}}{h(\emptyset)W_{\mathcal{C}_{t}}} \quad \forall u \in \mathcal{C}_{t}.$$ 

(iii) For any bounded measurable function $f: \mathbb{R}^{N} \to \mathbb{R}$ and for any bounded $\mathcal{F}_{t}$-measurable random variable $\Phi_{t}$,

$$E_{x}\left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{C}_{t}} \frac{h(u)}{h(\emptyset)\lambda^{u}} f(V(u_{i}), 0 \leq i \leq |u|) \Phi_{t} \right] = Q^{(h)}_{x}[f(S_{i}, 0 \leq i \leq \tau_{t+}^{+}) \Phi_{t}].$$

Similarly, take $a \leq x$ and assume that $Q^{(h)}_{x}(\tau_{t+}^{+} < \infty) = 1$. Then the analog holds for $\mathcal{C}_{t}$ replaced by $\mathcal{L}[a]$ (and $\tau_{t+}^{+}$ by $\tau_{a}^{-}$).

REMARK 3. If $Q^{(h)}_{x}(\tau_{t+}^{+} < \infty) = 1$ for all $t$, then $W_{\mathcal{C}_{t}}$ is a $(\mathbf{P}_{x}, \mathcal{F}_{t})$-martingale by Lemma 6.1 and Theorem 6.1 in [9]. The equivalent holds for $\mathcal{L}[a]$.

PROOF OF PROPOSITION 3. It is enough to prove that for any $g: \mathcal{T} \to \mathbb{R}$, measurable and bounded,

$$E_{x}\left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{C}_{t}} \frac{h(u)}{h(\emptyset)\lambda^{u}} f(V(u_{i}), 0 \leq i \leq |u|) g(u) \Phi_{t} \right] = Q^{(h)}_{x}[f(S_{i}, 0 \leq i \leq \tau_{t+}^{+}) g(w_{\tau_{t+}^{+}}) \Phi_{t}].$$

(5.12)

In fact, part (iii) follows from (5.12), and by taking $f \equiv g \equiv 1$ in (5.12) we get (5.11); Taking $f \equiv 1$ in (5.12) and using (5.11), we get part (ii); Finally since $\tau_{t+}^{+}$ is a stopping time for $(S_{k})_{k}$, the part (i) follows easily from Proposition 2.

To check (5.12), it is enough to show that for any $N \geq 1$, (5.12) holds for all $\Phi_{t}$ of form $\Phi_{t,N} := F(u, V(u), u \in \mathcal{T}, |u| \leq \tau_{t+}^{+}(u) \wedge N)$ with a bounded measurable function $F$. Notice that the left-hand side of (5.12) equals

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} E_{x}\left[ \sum_{|u|=n} 1_{[\tau_{t+}^{+}(u)=n]} \frac{h(u)}{h(\emptyset)\lambda^{n}} f(V(u_{i}), 0 \leq i \leq n) g(u) \Phi_{t,N} \right]$$

(5.13)

$$:= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (5.13)_{n},$$

with obvious definition of $(5.13)_{n}$. If $n \geq N$, since $\Phi_{t,N}$ is measurable with respect to $\mathcal{F}_{N}$, we deduce from (5.2) and the absolute continuity (5.3) that

$$(5.13)_{n} = Q^{(h)}_{x}[1_{[\tau_{t+}^{+}=n]} f(S_{i}, 0 \leq i \leq n) g(w_{n}) \Phi_{t,N}].$$
For \( n < N \), we deduce from the branching property along the stopping line \( C_t \) (see Jagers [19]) that

\[
(5.13)_n = \mathbb{E}_x \left[ \sum_{|u| = n} 1_{\tau^+_t(u) = n} f(V(u), 0 \leq i \leq n) g(u) \Phi_{t,N} \sum_{|v| = N, u < v} \frac{h(v)}{h(\emptyset)\lambda^N} \right] \\
= \mathbb{E}_x \left[ \sum_{|v| = N} 1_{\tau^+_t(v) = n} f(V(v), 0 \leq i \leq n) g(v) \Phi_{t,N} \frac{h(v)}{h(\emptyset)\lambda^N} \right] \\
= Q_x^{(h)} \left[ 1_{\tau^+_t = n} f(S_t, 0 \leq i \leq n) g(w_n) \Phi_{t,N} \right],
\]
by using again (5.2) and the absolute continuity (5.3) at \( N \). Noting that 
\[ f(S_t, 0 \leq i \leq \tau^+_t + t) g(w_{\tau^+_t + t}) \]
on \( \{ \tau^+_t + t = n \} \), we take the sum of (5.13) over all \( n \) and obtain (5.12). The proof for \( L[a] \) works by analogy. □

Let us present below a particular example of \( h \) and the corresponding laws of \((\Theta_n, S_n)_{n \geq 0}\). Recall (1.1). Define

\[
(5.14) \quad h(u) := \begin{cases} e^{\varrho V(u)}, & \text{if } \psi'(\varrho^*_+) = 0, \\ e^{\varrho + V(u)}, & \text{if } \psi'(\varrho^*_+) < 0, \end{cases} \quad u \in T.
\]

Since \( \psi(\varrho^*_+) = 0 \) in the critical case and \( \psi(\varrho^*_+) = 0 \) in the subcritical case, the function \( h \) satisfies (5.1) with \( \lambda = 1 \) and \( H^+ = T \). We mention that in the subcritical case, since \( \psi(\varrho^-) = 0 \), the function \( u \rightarrow e^{\varrho - V(u)} \) also satisfies (5.1) with \( \lambda = 1 \). This fact will be explored in Section 8 for the definition of \( Q^{(e^-)} \), the measure satisfying (5.3) with \( h(u) = e^{\varrho - V(u)} \).

Write for any \( x \in \mathbb{R} \), \( Q_x \equiv Q_x^{(h)} \) the probability with the choice of \( h \) given in (5.14). For simplification, let

\[
(5.15) \quad Q := \begin{cases} Q^*_+, & \text{if } \psi'(Q^*_+) = 0 \text{ (critical case)}; \\ Q^+_+, & \text{if } \psi'(Q^*_+) < 0 \text{ (subcritical case)}. \end{cases}
\]

Then for any \( x \in \mathbb{R} \), \( Q_x \) satisfies

\[
(5.16) \quad \frac{dQ_x}{dP_x}\big|_{\mathcal{F}_n} = e^{-\varrho x} \sum_{|u| = n} e^{\varrho V(u)}.
\]

We shall write \( Q \equiv Q_0 \) when \( x = 0 \). The following description of the law of \((S_n, \Theta_n)_{n \geq 0}\) under \( Q_x \) is an easy consequence of Proposition 2(i).

**Corollary 1.** Recall (5.15) and (5.5). Fix \( x \in \mathbb{R} \).

(i) Under \( Q_x \), \((S_n - S_{n-1}, \Theta_n)_{n \geq 1}\) are i.i.d. under \( Q_x \) whose common law is determined by

\[
Q_x \left[ f(S_n - S_{n-1}) e^{-\varrho (\Theta_n)} \right] = \mathbb{E} \left[ \sum_{|u| = 1} e^{\varrho V(u)} f(V(u)) e^{-\sum_{v \neq u, |v| = 1} g(V(v))} \right]
\]

for any \( n \geq 1 \), any measurable functions \( f, g : \mathbb{R} \to \mathbb{R}_+ \). In particular, the process \((S_n)_{n \geq 0}\) is a random walk on \( \mathbb{R} \), starting from \( S_0 = x \), with step distribution given by

\[
Q_x[f(S_n - S_{n-1})] = \mathbb{E} \left[ \sum_{|u|=1} f(V(u)) e^{\rho V(u)} \right], \quad n \geq 1. \tag{5.17}
\]

(ii) For any \( n \geq 1 \) and any measurable function \( F : \mathbb{R}^{n+1} \to \mathbb{R}_+ \),

\[
\mathbb{E}_x \left[ \sum_{|u|=n} F(V(u_i), 0 \leq i \leq n) \right] = e^{\rho x} Q_x[e^{-\rho S_n} F(S_i, 0 \leq i \leq n)].
\]

(iii) For any \( n \geq 1 \), and any \(|u| = n\),

\[
Q_x(w_n = u | \mathcal{F}_n) = \frac{e^{\rho V(u)}}{\sum_{|v|=n} e^{\rho V(v)}}.
\]

Remark that by (5.17), \( Q[S_1] = 0 \) and \( Q[S_2^2] = \psi''(\rho_*) > 0 \) in the critical case, while \( Q[S_1] = \psi'(\rho_+) > 0 \) in the subcritical case.

5.2. Spinal decomposition for a killed branching random walk. Before introducing a change of measure related to the killed branching walk, we recall some elementary facts on the Palm distribution of the point process \( L = \sum_{|u|=1} \delta_{\{V(u)\}} \) under \( \mathbb{P} \). Let \( \mathbb{E}(\mathcal{L}(dx)) \) be the intensity measure of \( \mathcal{L} \), namely for any measurable function \( f : \mathbb{R} \to \mathbb{R}_+ \),

\[
\int_{\mathbb{R}} f(x) \mathbb{E}(\mathcal{L}(dx)) = \mathbb{E} \left[ \sum_{|u|=1} f(V(u)) \right].
\]

Clearly \( \mathbb{E}(\mathcal{L}(dx)) \) is \( \sigma \)-finite since \( \psi \) is well defined on some interval. Then there exists a family \( (\Xi_x, x \in \mathbb{R}) \), called reduced Palm distributions, of distributions of random point measures on \( \mathbb{R} \) such that

\[
\int_{\Omega_f} F(x, \theta) \Xi_x(d\theta) = \frac{\mathbb{E}[F(x, \mathcal{L} - \delta_{\{x\}}) \mathcal{L}(dx)]}{\mathbb{E}(\mathcal{L}(dx))}
\]

for \( \mathbb{E}(\mathcal{L}(dx)) \)-a.e. \( x \)

\[
(5.18)
\]

for any measurable \( F : \mathbb{R} \times \Omega_f(\mathbb{R}) \to \mathbb{R}_+ \), and where \( \Omega_f \) denotes the set of \( \sigma \)-finite measures on \( \mathbb{R} \); see Kallenberg [21], Chapter 10 for more details. Roughly said, \( \Xi_x \) is the distribution of \( \mathcal{L} - \delta_{\{x\}} \) conditioned on that \( \mathcal{L} \) charges \( x \).

In this subsection, let \((S_n), Q_x \) be as in Corollary 1 and (5.16). Based on Corollary 1(i) (with \( n = 1 \) and \( x = 0 \)), elementary computations give that for any measurable \( f, g : \mathbb{R} \to \mathbb{R}_+ \),

\[
Q[f(S_1)e^{-(g, \Theta_1)}] = \int_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{E}(\mathcal{L}(dx)) e^{\rho x} f(x) \int_{\Omega_f} e^{-(g, \theta)} \Xi_x(d\theta).
\]
It follows immediately from (5.17) that the law of $S_1$ under $Q$ is given by
\[ Q(S_1 \in dx) = E_1 \left[ e^{-\langle g, \Theta_1 \rangle} \right] = \int_{\mathbb{R}} Q(S_1 \in dx) f(x) \int_{\Omega_f} e^{-\langle g, \theta \rangle} \Xi_x(d\theta). \]

In words, $\Xi_x$ is the law of $\Theta_1$ conditioned on $\{S_1 = x\}$ under $Q$.

Now, we are interested in a change of measure in the killed branching random walk. To introduce the corresponding density, we consider $R(\cdot)$ the renewal function of the random walk $(S_n)_{n \geq 0}$ under $Q$. More precisely, for $x > 0$, $R(x)$ is defined by the expected number (under $Q$) of visits to $[-x, 0]$ before first returning to $[0, \infty)$, i.e., $R(0) = 1$, and
\[ R(x) := \int_{\mathbb{R}} Q(S_1 \in dx) f(x) \int_{\Omega_f} e^{-\langle g, \theta \rangle} \Xi_x(d\theta). \]

(5.20)

It is well known that $(R(S_n) \{\tau^- > n\}, n \geq 0)$ is a $Q_x$-martingale for any $x \geq 0$; see, for example, [6]. Then $h_+$ satisfies (5.1) with $\lambda = 1$. Note that in this case, $\mathcal{H}_x = \{u \in \mathcal{T} : V(u_0) \geq 0, \ldots, V(u_{|u|}) \geq 0\} = \mathcal{Z}$ is exactly the set of progeny of the killed branching walk.

Let $Q^+_x$ be the probability satisfying (5.3) and (5.2) with $h = h_+$,
\[ \frac{dQ^+_x}{dP_x} |_{\mathcal{F}_n} := e^{-\langle g, x \rangle} R(x) \sum_{|u| = n, u \in \mathcal{Z}} R(V(u)) e^{\langle g, u \rangle} =: M^*_n, \quad x \geq 0, n \geq 1 \]

with $M^*_0 := 1$. Write for simplification $Q^+_x = Q^+_0$. Recalling (5.5), we deduce from Proposition 2 the following result; see Figure 5 below.

**Corollary 2.** Recall (5.15). Fix $x \geq 0$. Under $Q^+_x$:
TOTAL PROGENY OF A KILLED BRANCHING RANDOM WALK 3813

(a) \((S_n)_{n \geq 0}\) is a \((\mathcal{G}_n)\)-Markov chain: for any \(n \geq 1, y > 0\) and any measurable function \(f : \mathbb{R}_+ \to \mathbb{R}_+\),

\[
Q^+_x[f(S_n) | \mathcal{G}_{n-1}, S_{n-1} = y] = Q_y \left[ \frac{R(S_1)}{R(y)} f(S_1) 1_{[S_1 \geq 0]} \right].
\]

In words, under \(Q^+_x\), the process \((S_n, n \geq 0)\) has the same law as the random walk \((S_n, n \geq 0)\) under \(P_x\), conditioned to stay nonnegative.

(b) Conditioned on \((S_n)_{n \geq 0}\), the point processes \((\Theta_n)_{n \geq 1}\) are independent, and each \(\Theta_n\) is distributed as \(\Xi_{S_n - S_{n-1}}\).

(c) For any nonnegative function \(F\) and any \(n \geq 0\),

\[
E_x \left[ \sum_{u \in \mathbb{Z}, |u| = n} F(V(u)_i, 0 \leq i \leq |u|) \right] = R(x)e^{\varrho x}Q^+_x \left[ \frac{e^{-0S_n}}{R(S_n)} F(S_i, 0 \leq i \leq n) \right].
\]

PROOF. The formula many-to-one (c) is routine. Let us only check (a) and (b):

By Proposition 2(i), we get that for any \(n \geq 1,\)

\[
Q^+_x[e^{-(g,\Theta_n)} f(S_n) | \mathcal{G}_{n-1}, S_{n-1} = y] = E_y \left[ \sum_{|u| = 1} \frac{1}{R(y)e^{\varrho y}} e^{\varrho V(u)} R(V(u)) \right. \times \left. 1_{[V(u) \geq 0]} f(V(u)) e^{-\sum_{v \neq u, |v| = 1} g(V(v)-y)} \right]
\]

(5.23)

\[
= Q_y \left[ \frac{R(S_1)}{R(y)} 1_{[S_1 \geq 0]} f(S_1) e^{-(g,\Theta_1)} \right]
\]

(5.24)

\[
= Q_y \left[ \frac{R(S_1 + S_1)}{R(y)} 1_{[y + S_1 \geq 0]} f(y + S_1) e^{-(g,\Theta_1)} \right],
\]

(5.25)

by using Corollary 1(i). Taking \(g = 0\) in (5.24) yields the assertions in (a). Taking \(n = 1\) gives the joint law of \((S_1, \Theta_1)\) under \(Q^+_x\). Let \(p(dz) = Q(S_1 \in dz)\) be the law.
of \( S_1 \) under \( Q \). Recall that \( \Xi_z \) is the law of \( \Theta_1 \) conditioning on \( \{ S_1 = z \} \) under \( Q \). Then for any event \( A \in \mathcal{G}_{n-1} \), we deduce from (5.25) that

\[
Q^+_x \left[ e^{-\langle g, \Theta_n \rangle} f(S_n) 1_A \right] = Q^+_x \left[ 1_A f(S_n) \int_{\Omega_f} \Xi_{S_{n-1}}(d\theta) e^{-\langle g, \theta \rangle} \right]
\]

by using (a) for the last equality. This together with Markov’s property of \((S_n)\) with respect to \((\mathcal{G}_n)\), imply that for any \( n \geq 1 \) and \( g : \mathbb{R} \to \mathbb{R} \),

\[
Q^+_x \left[ e^{-\langle g, \Theta_n \rangle} |_{\mathcal{G}_{n-1}} (S_j)_{j \geq 0} \right] = \int_{\Omega_f} \Xi_{S_{n-1}}(d\theta) e^{-\langle g, \theta \rangle},
\]

proving (b). \( \square \)

**Remark 4.** If we assume that \( L = \sum_{i=1}^{\nu} \delta_{X_i} \) with \( (X_i)_{i \geq 1} \) a sequence of i.i.d. real-valued variables of the same law as \( X \), independent of \( \nu \), then the expectation in (5.24) equals

\[
\sum_{k \geq 0} P(\nu = k) k E \left[ \frac{R(X + y)}{R(y)} e^{\varphi X} 1_{\{X + y \geq 0\}} f(X + y) \right] (\mathbb{E} e^{-\varphi(X)})^{k-1},
\]

which implies that under \( Q^+_x \) for each \( n \geq 1 \), conditionally on \( \mathcal{G}_{n-1} \) and on \( \{ S_{n-1} = y \} \), \( S_n \) and \( \Theta_n \) are independent and \( \Theta_n \) is distributed as \( \sum_{i=1}^{\nu-1} \delta_{X_i} \), with \( \nu \) the size-biased of \( \nu \), \( Q^+_x (\nu = k) = k P(\nu = k)/E[\nu], k \geq 1 \), and independent of \( (X_i)_{i \geq 1} \).

We may extend Corollary 2 to the stopping lines. Remark that \( \mathcal{C}_t \cap \mathcal{L} = \mathcal{K}(t) \); see (5.7) and (1.11). We deduce from Proposition 3 the following result:

**Corollary 3.** Recall (5.15) and (5.8). Fix \( 0 \leq x < t \). We have

(5.26) \[
\frac{dQ^+_x}{dP^0} |_{\mathcal{F}_{\mathcal{C}_t}} = e^{-\varphi x} R(x) \sum_{u \in \mathcal{K}(t)} R(V(u)) e^{\varphi V(u)} =: M^*_x.
\]

(i) Under probability \( Q^+_x \), conditionally on \( \mathcal{G}_{\mathcal{C}_t} \) and on \( \{ V(v) = x_v, v \in \bigcup_{k=1}^{v^+_x} \tilde{V}_k \} \), the shifted branching random walks \( \{ V(vu) - V(v) \}_{u : |vu| \leq v^+_x(vu)} \), stopped by the line \( \mathcal{C}_t \), are independent, and have the same law as \( \{ V(u) \}_{|u| \leq v^+_x(u)} \) under \( P^0 \), stopped by the line \( \mathcal{C}_{t-x_v} \).
Moreover, for any measurable function $F : \mathbb{R}^{\mathbb{N}^+} \to \mathbb{R}_+$,

$$
E_x \left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{C}_t \cap \mathcal{Z}} F(V(u), 0 \leq i \leq |u|) \right]
= R(x)e^{\rho x} Q_t^+ \left[ \frac{e^{-\rho S_{\tau^+}}}{R(S_{\tau^+})} 1_{\{\tau^+ < \tau_0\}} F(S_i, 0 \leq i \leq \tau^+) \right].
$$

6. Maximum of the killed branching random walk: Proofs of Theorem 3 and Proposition 1. Let us first recall the following criterion for convergence in distribution of point processes which can be found in Resnick [32]; see page 153, Proposition 3.19. Let $E$ be a polish space. Then, let us define the Laplace transform of a point process $\theta$ with probability measure $P$ by

$$
\Psi_P(f) := \int \exp \left\{ -\int f d\theta \right\} dP(\theta) = \int \exp \left\{ -\langle f, \theta \rangle \right\} dP(\theta),
$$

(6.1)

where $f$ is a positive measurable function from $E$ to $\mathbb{R}$. Let $C^+_K(E)$ be the space of continuous functions from $E$ to $\mathbb{R}_+$ with compact support. Then we have

$$
\lim_{n \to \infty} \Psi_{P_n}(f) = \Psi_P(f) \quad \forall f \in C^+_K(E),
$$

(6.2)

if and only if

$$
P_n \xrightarrow{(\text{vague})} P, \quad n \to \infty,
$$

(6.3)

which is the same as the convergence in distribution of the point processes.

Recall the real-valued random walk $(S_n)$ defined in Corollary 1. In order to treat both critical and subcritical cases in the same proof, we introduce the following function defined on $\mathbb{R}_+$ by

$$
\mathcal{R}(t) := \begin{cases} t, & \text{if } \psi'(\rho^*) = 0, \\ 1, & \text{if } \psi'(\rho^*) < 0 \end{cases}, \quad \rho := \begin{cases} \rho^*, & \text{if } \psi'(\rho^*) = 0, \\ \rho^+, & \text{if } \psi'(\rho^*) < 0 \end{cases}
$$

(6.4)

and observe that the renewal function $R(\cdot)$, associated with the random walk $(S_n, Q)$ defined by (5.20), satisfies [see (5.21)]

$$
R(t) \sim C_R \mathcal{R}(t), \quad t \to \infty.
$$

We take the notation of Theorem 3 and Proposition 1. The key step is to prove that for any $f \in C^+_K(\mathbb{R})$ and when $t \to \infty$, we have

$$
E_x \left[ e^{-(f, \mu_{\mathcal{H}_t}, t)} 1_{\{H(t) > 0\}} \right] \sim \frac{R(x)e^{\rho x}}{C_R \mathcal{R}(t)e^{\rho t}} Q \left[ \frac{e^{-(f, \mu_{\mathcal{H}_t}, t)}}{\eta} \right].
$$

(6.5)

We recall from (5.26) that $M^*_i = \frac{e^{-\rho x}}{R(x)} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(t)} R(V(u))e^{\rho V(u)}$, where $\mathcal{H}(t)$ denotes the set of those $u \in \mathcal{Z}$ satisfying $\tau^+_i = |u|$ [see (1.11)]. Then $H(t) > 0$
if and only if \( M^*_{\mathcal{E}_t} > 0 \). It follows that
\[
\mathbb{E}_x \left[ e^{-\langle f, \mu_{\mathcal{B}, t} \rangle} 1_{\{H(t) > 0\}} \right] = \mathbb{E}_x \left[ \frac{M^*_{\mathcal{E}_t}}{M^*_{\mathcal{E}_t}} e^{-\langle f, \mu_{\mathcal{B}, t} \rangle} 1_{\{H(t) > 0\}} \right] \\
= Q_x^+ \left[ \frac{e^{-\langle f, \mu_{\mathcal{B}, t} \rangle}}{M^*_{\mathcal{E}_t}} \right].
\]
(6.6)

We will now use the so-called “decomposition along the spine” \((w_k)\) (under \(Q^+_x\)). Recalling that \( \mathcal{U}_k = \{ u : |u| = k, \overset{\sim}{u} = w_{k-1}, x \neq w_k \} \), we have
\[
(f, \mu_{\mathcal{B}, t}) = f(T^+_t) 1_{\{\beta_t(w_{\tau^+_t}) = \infty\}} + \sum_{1 \leq k \leq \tau^+_t} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_k} 1_{\{\beta_t(u) = \infty\}} \langle f, \mu^{(u)}_{\mathcal{B}, t} \rangle,
\]
(6.7)

where \( T^+_t = S_{\tau^+_t} - t \) denotes the overshoot of \( S \) above the level \( t \) [see (5.9)], and for any \( u \in \mathcal{T} \) the point process \( \mu^{(u)}_{\mathcal{B}, t} \) is associated to the subtree \( T^{(u)} \) (rooted at \( u \)) of \( \mathcal{T} \) and defined by
\[
\mu^{(u)}_{\mathcal{B}, t} := \sum_{v \in T^{(u)} \cap \mathcal{H}_t} \delta_{V(v)-t}, \quad \mu_t := \sum_{v \in \mathcal{T} \cap \mathcal{H}_t} \delta_{V(v)-t}.
\]
(6.8)

Recall that \( R(s) \sim C_R R(s) \) when \( s \to \infty \). Since \( V(u) > t \) for all \( u \in \mathcal{H}_t \), we get that, under \( Q_x^+ \),
\[
M^*_{\mathcal{E}_t} \sim \frac{e^{-\vartheta x}}{R(x)} \mathbb{E}_x \left[ e^{\vartheta t} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}_t} \mathcal{B}_t \left( 1 + \frac{V(u) - t}{t} \right) e^{\vartheta (V(u) - t)} \right],
\]
(6.9)

Then repeating the spinal decomposition arguments for the above sum \( \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}_t} \) we obtain
\[
\mathbb{E}_x \left[ e^{-\langle f, \mu_{\mathcal{B}, t} \rangle} 1_{\{H(t) > 0\}} \right] \sim \frac{R(x) e^{\vartheta x}}{C_R \mathcal{B}_t} e^{\vartheta t} Q_x^+ \left[ I_\beta(t) \right],
\]
(6.10)

with
\[
I_\beta(t) := \exp \left\{ -f(T^+_t) 1_{\{\beta_t(w_{\tau^+_t}) = \infty\}} - \sum_{1 \leq k \leq \tau^+_t} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_k} 1_{\{\beta_t(u) = \infty\}} \langle f, \mu^{(u)}_{\mathcal{B}, t} \rangle \right\},
\]
\[
J(t) := \mathcal{B}_t \left( 1 + \frac{T^+_t}{t} \right) e^{\vartheta T^+_t} + \sum_{1 \leq k \leq \tau^+_t} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_k} \int \mathcal{B}_t \left( 1 + \frac{z}{t} \right) e^{\vartheta z} \mu_t^{(u)}(dz).
\]

Therefore, to prove (6.5) we only have to show that
\[
\lim_{t \to \infty} Q_x^+ \left[ I_\beta(t) \right] = Q \left[ \frac{e^{-\langle f, \mu_{\mathcal{B}, \infty} \rangle}}{\vartheta R} \right].
\]
(6.11)
Note that \( I_β(t) ∈ [0, 1] \) and \( J(t) ≥ 1 \), hence \( \frac{I_β(t)}{J(t)} ∈ [0, 1] \). Recalling the convergence in law of the process \( (t - S_{τ_i - j})_{0 ≤ j ≤ K} \) for any fixed \( K ≥ 1 \) (see Lemma 4), we will restrict the sums over \( k \) in \( I_β(t) \) and \( J(t) \) to \( k \)'s between \( τ_i^+ - K \) and \( τ_i^+ \). To this aim let us introduce \( H^u(t) \) the number of descendants of \( u \) that reach \( t \) before \( 0 \) [with the convention \( H^u(t) = 1 \) if \( V(u) > t \)]. The following lemma ensures that with probability close to 1, \( \sum_{1 ≤ k ≤ τ_i^+ - K} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{O}_k} H^u(t) = 0 \) (the sum is 0 if \( τ_i^+ ≤ K \):

**Lemma 9.** We have:

(i) \( \lim K \to \infty \lim sup_t \to \infty Q^{+}_{x}(\sum_{k=1}^{τ_i^+ - K} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{O}_k} H^u(t) ≥ 1) = 0; \)

(ii) \( \lim K \to \infty \lim sup_t \to \infty Q^{+}_{x}(\beta_t(w_{τ_i^+}) ≤ τ_i^+ - K) = 0. \)

**Proof.** See Section 9.4. □

Notice that \( \lim_t \to \infty Q^{+}_{x}(τ_i^+ > K) = 1 \) and that on \( \{ \beta_t(w_{τ_i^+}) > τ_i^+ - K, τ_i^+ > K \}, \)

\[
\beta_t(u) = \inf\{ τ_i^+ - K < j ≤ |u| : B(u, j) > e^{t - V(u,j - 1)} \} =: \beta^K_t(u)
\]

for any \( u = w_{τ_i^+} \) or \( u \in \mathcal{O}_k \) with \( τ_i^+ - K < k ≤ τ_i^+ \). The advantage of \( \beta^K_t(u) \) is that \( \beta^K_t(u) \) only locally depends on the spines around \( τ_i^+ \). Therefore (6.11) will be a consequence of

\[
\lim_{K \to \infty} \lim_{t \to \infty} Q_{x}^{+}\left[ \frac{I_β(t, K)}{J'(t, K)} 1_{\{τ_i^+ > K\}} \right] = Q\left[ \frac{e^{-⟨f, μ_{\mathcal{B}, \infty}\rangle}}{\Re} \right],
\]

with

\[
I_β'(t, K) := \exp\left\{ -f(T_t^+) 1_{\{β^K_t(w_{τ_i^+}) = \infty\}} - \sum_{τ_i^+ - K < k ≤ τ_i^+} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{O}_k} 1_{\{β^K_t(u) = \infty\}} |f, μ_{\mathcal{B}, t}(u)| \right\},
\]

\[
J'(t, K) := B\left( 1 + \frac{T_t^+}{t} \right)e^{T_t^+} + \sum_{τ_i^+ - K < k ≤ τ_i^+} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{O}_k} \int B\left( 1 + \frac{z}{t} \right)e^{μ_t(u)}(dz).
\]

Recall from (6.8) that the measures \( μ_t^{(u)}_{\mathcal{B}, t} \) in the previous expressions are associated with the branching random walk killed at 0. Now, we want to replace the measures \( μ_t^{(u)}_{\mathcal{B}, t} \) by the same measures \( \tilde{μ}_t^{(u)}_{\mathcal{B}, t} \) but associated with the nonkilled branching random walk,

\[
\tilde{μ}_t^{(u)} := \sum_{v ∈ T(u) \cap \mathcal{G}_t} 1_{\{β_t(v) = \infty\}} δ(V(v) - t),
\]

(6.13)

\[
\tilde{μ}_t^{(u)} := \sum_{v ∈ T(u) \cap \mathcal{G}_t} δ(V(v) - t).
\]
where we recall that $v \in \mathcal{T}(u) \cap \mathcal{E}_t$ if and only if $v$ is a descendant of $u$ and $\tau_t^+(v) = |v|$; see (5.7) for the definition of $\mathcal{E}_t$. The following lemma confirms that we can replace $\mu(u)$ by $\tilde{\mu}(u)$ with probability close to 1:

**Lemma 10.** Let us define for $t > 0$ and $K \geq 1$,

$$
\Gamma(t, K) := \{\tau_t^+ > K\}
$$

$$
\cap \{(\mu_{\mathcal{B},t}^{(u)}, \mu_t^{(u)}) = (\tilde{\mu}_{\mathcal{B},t}^{(u)}, \tilde{\mu}_t^{(u)}), \forall u \in \mathcal{U}_k, \forall k \in (\tau_t^+ - K, \tau_t^+]\}.
$$

Then for any $K \geq 1$, we have

$$
\lim_{t \to \infty} Q^+_x(\Gamma(t, K)^c) = 0.
$$

**Proof.** See Section 9.4. □

By Lemmas 9 and 10, to prove (6.5) it is enough to show that

$$
\lim_{K \to \infty} \lim_{t \to \infty} Q^+_x \left[ \frac{\tilde{I}_\beta(t, K)}{\tilde{J}(t, K)} 1\{\tau_t^+ > K\} \right] = Q^+ \left[ \frac{e^{-(f, \mu_{\mathcal{B},\infty})}}{\rho} \right],
$$

where $\tilde{I}_\beta(t, K)$ and $\tilde{J}(t, K)$ are as $I'_\beta(t, K)$ and $J'(t, K)$ but with $\tilde{\mu}(u)$ in lieu of $\mu(u)$,

$$
\tilde{I}_\beta(t, K) := \exp \left\{ -f(T_t^+) 1\{\beta_{T_t^+}(w_{T_t^+}) = \infty\} - \sum_{U_{\mathcal{B},t}^{(u)} \leq u \in \mathcal{U}_k} 1\{\beta_{U_{\mathcal{B},t}^{(u)}}(w_{U_{\mathcal{B},t}^{(u)}}) = \infty\} \langle f, \tilde{\mu}_{\mathcal{B},t}^{(u)} \rangle \right\},
$$

$$
\tilde{J}(t, K) := R \left( 1 + \frac{T_t^+}{t} \right) e^{\rho T_t^+} + \sum_{T_t^+ > k \leq \tau_t^+_a} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_k} \int R \left( 1 + \frac{z}{t} \right) e^{\rho z} \tilde{\mu}_t^{(u)}(dz).
$$

Let us now introduce a family of point processes denoted by $(\overline{\mu}_{\mathcal{B},y}, \overline{\mu}_y)_{y \in \mathbb{R}}$, which are associated to the nonkilled branching random walk $V$ under $\mathbb{P}$ and are defined by

$$
\overline{\mu}_{\mathcal{B},y} := \begin{cases} 
\sum_{v \in \mathcal{C}_y} 1\{\beta_{T_t^+}(v) = \infty\} \delta_{V(v) - y}, & \text{if } y \geq 0, \\
\delta_{-y}, & \text{if } y < 0,
\end{cases}
$$

and

$$
\overline{\mu}_y := \begin{cases} 
\sum_{v \in \mathcal{C}_y} \delta_{V(v) - y}, & \text{if } y \geq 0, \\
\delta_{-y}, & \text{if } y < 0,
\end{cases}
$$

where $\mathcal{E}_y$ was defined in (5.7); in particular, $\{V(v) - y, v \in \mathcal{E}_y\}$ denotes exactly the set of overshoots of the (nonkilled) branching random walk $V$ above the level $y$. By part (i) of Corollary 3, under $Q^+$, conditionally on $\mathcal{G}_{\mathcal{E}_t}$ and on $\{V(u) = x_u, u \in \mathcal{E}_t\}$.
\(\mathcal{D}_k, 1 \leq k \leq \tau^+_t\), the family \(\{\tilde{\mu}^{(u), \beta}_{t, \tau}, \tilde{\mu}^{(u)}_{t}\}, u \in \mathcal{D}_k, 1 \leq k \leq \tau^+_t\) is independent and satisfies

\[
(6.17) \quad (\tilde{\mu}^{(u), \beta}_{t, \tau}, \tilde{\mu}^{(u)}_{t}), \text{ under } Q^+_{x}, \text{ law } (\tilde{\mu}^{(u), \beta}_{t, -x}, \tilde{\mu}^{(u)}_{t - x}, \text{ under } P).
\]

For convenience of notation, let us introduce

\[
(6.18) \quad S^{(t)}_i := S^{\tau^+_t} - S^{\tau^+_t-i}, \quad 1 \leq i \leq \tau^+_t,
\]

\[
(6.19) \quad \Theta^{(t)}_i := \Theta^{\tau^+_t-i+1}, \quad 1 \leq i \leq \tau^+_t.
\]

Recall that \(T^+_t := S^{\tau^+_t} - t\) denotes the overshoot of \(S\) over \(t\). Thus, (6.17) yields that on \(\{\tau^+_t > K\},
\]

\[
(6.20) \quad Q^+_{x}\left[\frac{\tilde{I}_{\beta}(t, K)}{J(t, K)}\right]_{\mathcal{B}_{\mathcal{E}}_t} \overset{a.s.}{=} \varphi_{t, K}(T^+_t, S^{(t)}_1, \ldots, S^{(t)}_K, \Theta^{(1)}_1, \ldots, \Theta^{(K)}_K),
\]

where for any \(t_0 > 0, s_1, \ldots, s_K > 0\) and the point measures \(\theta^{(i)}, 1 \leq i \leq K\), of form \(\theta^{(i)} = \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \delta_{x(i)}^{(j)}, \) we define

\[
\mathcal{D}_{i, K} := \bigcap_{j=i}^{K} \{\mathcal{B}(\theta^{(j)}) \leq e^{-t_0 + s_j}\}, \quad 1 \leq i \leq K
\]

and

\[
\varphi_{t, K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(K)}) := E\left[\frac{\exp\left(-f(t_0)1_{\mathcal{D}_{i, K}} - \sum_{j=1}^{s_1} \theta^{(j)}(x^{(i)}, y^{(j)}) \right)}{1 + t_0^i} e^{0t_0} + \sum_{i=1}^{K} \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \int \mathcal{B}(1 + z_0) e^{z_0} \mu^{(i, j)}(z_0) d(z_0) \right],
\]

and with (under \(P\)) \(((\tilde{\mu}^{(i, j)}_{x, y}, \tilde{\mu}^{(i, j)}_{y, y}), y \in \mathbb{R})_{i, j \geq 1} \) i.i.d. copies of \((\tilde{\mu}^{(i, j)}_{x, y}, \tilde{\mu}^{(i, j)}_{y, y}), y \in \mathbb{R}\). Then, applying part (b) of Corollary 2 to (6.20) implies that on \(\{\tau^+_t > K\},
\]

\[
(6.21) \quad Q^+_{x}\left[\frac{\tilde{I}_{\beta}(t, K)}{J(t, K)}\right]_{S_k, 0 \leq k \leq \tau^+_t, \tau^+_t} \overset{a.s.}{=} \tilde{\varphi}_{t, K}(T^+_t, S^{(t)}_1, \ldots, S^{(t)}_K),
\]

with

\[
\tilde{\varphi}_{t, K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K) := \int \prod_{i=1}^{K} \mathbb{E}_{s_i - s_{i-1}} (d\theta^{(i)}) \varphi_{t, K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(K)}),
\]

with \(s_0 := 0\) for notational convenience. Now for any \((t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K) \in \mathbb{R}^*_+ \times \mathbb{R}^*_+^K\) and for any family \(\theta^{(i)}\) of point processes \(\theta^{(i)} := \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \delta_{x(i)}^{(j)}, \) let us define

\[
\varphi_{\infty, K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(K)}) := \lim_{t \to \infty} \varphi_{t, K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(K)}),
\]

\[
\tilde{\varphi}_{\infty, K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K) := \lim_{t \to \infty} \tilde{\varphi}_{t, K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K),
\]
and observe that these limits exist by the dominated convergence theorem, which
also yields that

\[ 0 \leq \tilde{\varphi}_{\infty, K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K) \leq \left( \prod_{i=1}^{K} \sum_{s_i} \right) \frac{1}{\varphi_{\infty, K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(K)})} \]

(6.22)

\[ = \int_{K} \prod_{i=1}^{K} \sum_{s_i} \left( \frac{1}{\varphi_{\infty, K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(K)})} \times \right. \]

\[ \exp \left\{ -f(t_0) \sum_{i=1}^{K} \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \left( \int_{s_i - t_0}^{s_j} \mu^{(i,j)}(d\theta) \right) \right\} + \sum_{i=1}^{K} \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \int_{s_i - t_0}^{s_j} \mu^{(i,j)}(dz) \right\].

The next step is to replace \( \tilde{\varphi}_{t,K} \) by \( \tilde{\varphi}_{\infty, K} \):

**Lemma 11.** Fix \( K \geq 1 \). Then we have

\[ \lim_{t \to \infty} Q^+_x[\tilde{\varphi}_{t,K}(T_t^+, S_1^{(i)}, \ldots, S_K^{(i)})] = 0. \]

(6.23)

**Proof.** See Section 9.4. \( \square \)

Note that since \( \tilde{\varphi}_{t,K}(\cdot) \) and \( \tilde{\varphi}_{\infty, K}(\cdot) \) differ only if \( \psi'(Q_\Phi) = 0 \), the previous result
is not trivial only in the critical case.

Finally thanks to (6.21) and Lemma 11, the double limits (6.14) will be a con-
sequence of the following lemma.

**Lemma 12.** We have

\[ \lim_{K \to \infty} \lim_{t \to \infty} Q^+_x[\tilde{\varphi}_{\infty, K}(T_t^+, S_1^{(i)}, \ldots, S_K^{(i)})] = Q \left[ \frac{e^{-\langle f, \mu_{\mathcal{B}, \infty} \rangle}}{|\mathcal{Y}|} \right], \]

where

\[ \mu_{\mathcal{B}, \infty} := \delta_{U\hat{S}_\sigma} + \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \mu^{(i,j)}(\mathcal{B}, \hat{S}_i - U\hat{S}_\sigma - \hat{X}_j) \]

(6.24)

\[ \mathcal{D}_i := \bigcap_{j=1}^{\infty} \{ \mathcal{B}(\tilde{\Theta}_j) \leq e^{-U\hat{S}_\sigma + \hat{S}_j} \} \quad \forall i \geq 1, \]

(6.25)

\[ \mu_{\infty} := \delta_{U\hat{S}_\sigma} + \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \mu^{(i,j)}(\hat{S}_i - U\hat{S}_\sigma - \hat{X}_j) \]

(6.26)
TOTAL PROGENY OF A KILLED BRANCHING RANDOM WALK 3821

\[ \Re := e^{\theta U} \hat{S}_0 + \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \sum_{j=1}^{\tilde{\nu}_i} \int e^{\theta z} \hat{\mu}(i,j) (d\tilde{\nu}_i) = \int e^{\theta z} \mu_\infty (dz) \]

and \( \varphi \) = \( \varphi_* \) if \( \psi' (\varphi_*) = 0 \), \( \varphi \) = \( \varphi_+ \) if \( \psi' (\varphi_*) < 0 \), and under \( Q \):

- the \((n^{i,j}, y \in \mathbb{R})_{i,j \geq 1}\) are i.i.d. with common distribution that of \((n^{i,j}, y \in \mathbb{R})_{i,j \geq 1}\) under \( P \) [see (6.16)], and are independent of everything else;
- the process \((\tilde{S}_n)\) (as well as the associated random time \( \tilde{\sigma} \)) and the random variable \( U \) are introduced in Lemma 4 (see Section 4.1);
- conditionally on \( \{ \tilde{S}_n, n \geq 0 \} \), the random point processes \( \tilde{\Theta}_i := \sum_{j=1}^{\tilde{\nu}_i} \delta_{\tilde{X}_{i,j}} \) for \( i \geq 1 \) are independent, and \( \tilde{\Theta}_i \) is distributed as \( \Xi_{\tilde{S}_{i-1} - \tilde{S}_i} \); see (5.18) and Corollary 2 for the Palm measures \((\Xi_z, z \in \mathbb{R})\).

PROOF. See Section 9.4. \( \Box \)

PROOF OF THEOREM 3 AND PROPOSITION 1. Assembling (6.21), Lemmas 11 and 12 imply (6.14), hence (6.5): namely for any \( f \in C^+_K (\mathbb{R}) \) and when \( t \to \infty \), we have

\[
\mathbb{E}_x \left[ e^{-\left( f, \hat{\mu}_{B,t} \right)} 1_{\{ H(t) > 0 \}} \right] \sim \frac{R(x) e^{\theta t}}{C_R (t) e^{\theta t}} Q \left[ e^{-\left( f, \hat{\mu}_{B,\infty} \right)} \right] \left[ R(x) e^{\theta x} \right] = \frac{R(x) e^{\theta x}}{C_R (t) e^{\theta t}} Q \left[ R(x) e^{\theta x} \right],
\]

by the definition of \( \hat{\mu}_{B,\infty} \). Taking \( f = 0 \) in the above asymptotical equivalence yields parts (i) and (ii) of Theorem 3 while Proposition 1 is a consequence of parts (i) and (ii) together with (6.5). Finally, taking \( B \equiv 0 \) in Proposition 1 gives part (iii), which completes the proof of Theorem 3. \( \Box \)

7. Proof of Theorem 2: The critical case. We look at the critical case \( \psi' (\varphi_*) = 0 \). By linear transformation on \( V \), we may assume that \( \varphi_* = 1 \) in the whole section without any loss of generality. We investigate the tail distribution of the number of leaves \( \# L[0] \); see (1.8) for the definition. We will see that when \( L[0] \) is large, the main contribution comes from particles that reached a critical height \( L \). For integrability reasons, we will also restrict to good particles whose brothers do not display atypical jumps, and are not too many. We denote by \( \mathcal{U}(v) := \{ u \in T : \tilde{v} = \tilde{v} ; u \neq v \} \) the set of brothers of \( v \) (\( \tilde{v} \) denotes as before the parent of \( v \) in the tree \( T \)). For \( \lambda > 1, L > 1 \) (typically \( \lambda \) is a large constant whereas \( L \to \infty \)), we say that

\[ u \in \mathbb{B}(L, \lambda) \text{ if there exists some } 1 \leq j \leq |u| : \]

\[
\sum_{v \in \mathcal{U}(u_j)} (1 + e^{\Delta V(v)}) > \lambda e^{(L-V(u_{j-1}))/2}
\]
and \( u \in \mathbb{G}(L, \lambda) \) if such \( j \) does not exist. In words, \( \mathbb{G}(L, \lambda) \) collects good particles in the sense that their large moments are finite; however, \( \mathbb{B}(L, \lambda) \) is a set of bad particles for which only low moments exist. Recall from (1.12) that \( Z[0, L] = \sum_u 1_{\{\tau_0^-(u) = |u| < \tau^+_L(u)\}} \) counts the number of leaves in the killed branching random walk that did not touch the level \( L \). Let us decompose \( Z[0, L] \) as the sums over good particles and bad particles,
\[
Z[0, L] = Z_g[0, L] + Z_b[0, L]
\]
with
\[
Z_g[0, L] := \sum_{u \in \mathbb{G}(L, \lambda)} 1_{\{\tau_0^-(u) = |u| < \tau^+_L(u)\}},
\]
(7.2)
\[
Z_b[0, L] := \sum_{u \in \mathbb{B}(L, \lambda)} 1_{\{\tau_0^-(u) = |u| < \tau^+_L(u)\}}.
\]

The following lemma shows that we can neglect the number of bad particles.

**Lemma 13.** For \( \delta > 0 \) small enough, there exist constants \( c = c(\delta) > 0 \) and \( c' = c'(\delta) > 0 \) such that for \( x \geq 0, \lambda \geq 1 \) and \( L \geq 1 \),
\[
E_x[Z_b[0, L]] \leq c\lambda^{-\delta} \frac{(1 + x)e^x}{L^2} + ce^x e^{-c'L}.
\]
(7.3)

For \( \delta > 0 \) small enough, there exists a constant \( c = c(\delta) > 0 \) such that for \( x \geq 0, \lambda \geq 1, L \geq 1 \) and \( B \geq 0 \),
\[
E_x\left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} 1_{\{u \in \mathbb{B}(L, \lambda)\}} Z^{(u)}[0, L + B] \right] \leq c\lambda^{-\delta} \frac{1 + B}{L} \frac{(1 + x)e^x}{L + B},
\]
(7.4)
where \( Z^{(u)}[0, L + B] \) is the number of leaves in \( \mathcal{L}[0] \) that are descendants of \( u \) and did not cross level \( L + B \).

**Proof.** We prove separately (7.3) and (7.4). The notation \( c \) denotes a constant that can change value from line to line.

**Proof of Equation (7.3).** Mentioning here that (5.1) holds with \( \lambda = 1 \) (because \( \psi(\varrho_*) = \varrho_* \psi'(\varrho_*) = 0 \)), Proposition 3 (applied to \( \mathcal{L}[0] \) and \( h(u) := e^{V(u)} \)) implies that
\[
E_x[Z_b[0, L]] = e^x Q_x\left[ \frac{1}{\sum_{u \in \mathcal{L}[0]} e^{V(u)}Z_b[0, L]} \right]
\]
\[
= e^x Q_x\left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{L}[0]} \frac{e^{V(u)}}{\sum_{u \in \mathcal{L}[0]} e^{V(u)}e^{-V(u)}1_{\{\tau_0^-(u) < \tau^+_L(u)\}}1_{\{u \in \mathbb{B}(L, \lambda)\}}} \right].
\]
The weight \( \frac{e^{V(u)}}{\sum_{u \in L[0]} e^{V(u)}} \) is the probability that the vertex \( u \) is the spine; see Proposition 3. Therefore,

\[
E_x[ Z_b[0, L] ] = e^x Q_x\left[ e^{-S_{t_0}} \mathbb{1}_{\{ t_0^+ < \tau_L^+ \}} \mathbb{1}_{\{ w_{t_0^-} \in \mathbb{B}(L, \lambda) \}} \right],
\]

where \( \tau_0^- \) (resp., \( \tau_L^+ \)) is the hitting time of \(( -\infty, 0 )\) [resp., \(( L, +\infty )\)] by the random walk \( S \). Let \( \delta \in (0, 1) \), and, for \( k \geq 1 \), \( a_k := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_k} \{ 1 + e^{\Delta V(u)} \} \) [we recall that \( \mathcal{U}_k := \mathcal{U}(w_k) \)]. From the definition of \( \mathbb{B}(L, \lambda) \), we observe that

\[
1_{\{ w_{t_0^-} \in \mathbb{B}(L, \lambda) \}} \leq \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_0^-} 1_{\{ a_k > \lambda e^{(L-S_{k-1})/2} \}} \leq \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_0^-} \min(\delta_k \lambda, e^{-\delta(L-S_{k-1})/2}, 1).
\]

It follows that

\[
(7.5) \quad E_x[ Z_b[0, L] ] \leq e^x Q_x\left[ e^{-S_{t_0}} \mathbb{1}_{\{ t_0^+ < \tau_L^+ \}} \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_0^-} \min(\delta_k \lambda, e^{-\delta(L-S_{k-1})/2}, 1) \right].
\]

We first consider the term corresponding to \( k = \tau_0^- \), that is,

\[
Q_x\left[ e^{-S_{t_0}} \mathbb{1}_{\{ t_0^+ < \tau_L^+ \}} \min(\delta_{\tau_0^-} \lambda, e^{-\delta(L-S_{\tau_0^-})/2}, 1) \right] \leq Q_x\left[ e^{-S_{t_0}} \min(\delta_{\tau_0^-} \lambda, e^{-\delta(L-S_{\tau_0^-})/2}, 1) \right] .
\]

We know that \( (S_n) \) is under \( Q \) a centered random walk [since \( \psi'(1) = 0 \)]. Assumption (1.3) ensures that \( Q[ e^{-(1-\eta)S_1} ] \) is finite if \( \eta \) is small enough. In turn, it implies [see (4.10)] that

\[
Q_x\left[ e^{-(1-\eta)S_{t_0^-}} \right] \leq c
\]

for small \( \eta > 0 \), and any \( x \geq 0 \). We also have \( Q_x\left[ e^{S_{t_0^-} - S_{t_0^-}} \right] \leq c \) by (4.15). Then it is not hard to see that, with \( E := \{ S_{t_0^-} \geq -\delta L/8, S_{t_0^-} \leq L/2 \} \), we have, for some constant \( \eta' > 0 \),

\[
Q_x\left[ e^{-S_{t_0^-}} 1_E \right] \leq c' e^{-\eta' \delta L}.
\]

Therefore, we can restrict to the event \( E \), on which \( e^{-S_{t_0^-}} \leq e^{\delta L/8} \), and \( e^{-\delta(L-S_{t_0^-})/2} \leq e^{-\delta L/4} \). It yields that

\[
Q_x\left[ e^{-S_{t_0^-}} \min(\delta_{t_0^-} \lambda, e^{-\delta(L-S_{t_0^-})/2}, 1) \right] \leq c' e^{-\eta' \delta L} + \lambda^{-\delta} e^{-\delta L/8} Q_x[ \delta_{t_0^-} ].
\]

Observe that

\[
Q_x[ \delta_{t_0^-} ] = \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} Q_x[ 1_{\{ j-1 < t_0^- \}} Q_{S_{j-1}}[ 1_{\{ S_{j} < 0 \}} \theta_{S_{j}} ] ] ,
\]
by Markov’s property at \( j - 1 \). For \( y := S_{j-1} \geq 0 \),
\[
\mathbb{Q}_y[1_{\{S_1 < 0\}}a_1^\delta] \leq \mathbb{Q}_y[e^{-\langle 1/2 \rangle S_1 a_1^\delta}] = e^{-\langle 1/2 \rangle y} \mathbb{Q}[e^{-\langle 1/2 \rangle S_1 a_1^\delta}].
\]

By the Cauchy–Schwarz inequality and (1.3), we have \( \mathbb{Q}[e^{-S_1/2 \delta}] \leq c \) if \( \delta > 0 \) is chosen small enough. Therefore,
\[
\mathbb{Q}_x[a_1^\delta] \leq c \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{Q}_x[1_{\{j-1 < \tau_0\}}e^{-\langle 1/2 \rangle S_{j-1}}],
\]
which is uniformly bounded by (4.14). Hence, we showed that
\[
(7.6) \quad \mathbb{Q}_x[e^{-S_{\tau_0}} 1_{\{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}} a_1^\delta \lambda^{-\delta} e^{-\langle L-S_{\tau_0^-}\rangle/2}] \leq ce^{-\eta'\delta L}.
\]

We consider now the terms corresponding to \( k < \tau_0^- \) in (7.5). By Markov’s property at time \( k \), we get
\[
\mathbb{Q}_x[e^{-S_{\tau_0^-}} 1_{\{k < \tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}} a_k^\delta \lambda^{-\delta} e^{-\langle L-S_{k-1}\rangle/2}] \leq \lambda^{-\delta} \mathbb{Q}_x[1_{\{k < \tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}} a_k^\delta e^{-\langle L-S_{k-1}\rangle/2}] \sup_{y \geq 0} \mathbb{Q}_y[e^{-S_{\tau_0^-}}]
\]
\[
= c\lambda^{-\delta} \mathbb{Q}_x[1_{\{k < \tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}} a_k^\delta e^{-\langle L-S_{k-1}\rangle/2}],
\]
again by (4.10). By Markov’s property at time \( k - 1 \), we observe that the last expectation is \( \mathbb{Q}_x[1_{\{k < \tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}} e^{-\langle L-S_{k-1}\rangle/2}] \mathbb{Q}[a_1^\delta] \). Summing over \( k \geq 1 \), we deduce that
\[
\mathbb{Q}_x\left[e^{-S_{\tau_0^-}} 1_{\{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}} \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_0^- - 1} a_k^\delta e^{-\langle L-S_{k-1}\rangle/2}\right] \leq c \mathbb{Q}_x\left[1_{\{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}} \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_0^- - 1} e^{-\langle L-S_{k-1}\rangle/2}\right].
\]

By (4.18), we have \( \mathbb{Q}_x[1_{\{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}} \sum_{k=0}^{\tau_0^- - 1} e^{-\langle L-S_{k-1}\rangle/2}] \leq c \frac{1+x}{L^2} \) for some \( c = c(\delta) \). We obtain that
\[
\lambda^{-\delta} \mathbb{Q}_x\left[e^{-S_{\tau_0^-}} 1_{\{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}} \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_0^- - 1} a_k^\delta e^{-\langle L-S_{k-1}\rangle/2}\right] \leq c' \lambda^{-\delta} \frac{1+x}{L^2}.
\]

Then (7.3) follows from equations (7.5) and (7.6). \( \square \)

**Proof of Equation (7.4).** By the branching property, we have

\[
\mathbb{E}_x\left[\sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}^*} 1_{\{u \in \mathcal{B}(L,\lambda)\}} Z^{(u)}[0, L + B]\right] = \mathbb{E}_x\left[\sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}^*} 1_{\{u \in \mathcal{B}(L,\lambda)\}} f(V(u))\right].
\]
with \( f(y) := E_y[Z[0, L + B]]\). Using the measure \( Q_y \), Proposition 3 implies that
\[
f(y) = e^y Q_y[e^{-V(w_0)} 1_{\{\tau_0 < \tau_{L+B}\}}]
\]
which is smaller than \( c \frac{(1 + (L + B - y))e^y}{L + B} \) by (4.13). It follows that
\[
E_x\left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} 1_{\{U \in B(L, \lambda)\}} Z(u)[0, L + B] \right] \leq c(1 + B) L + B E_x\left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} e^{-V(u)} \right].
\]
By Proposition 3 with \( C_L \) and \( h(y) := e^y \), we observe that
\[
E_x\left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} 1_{\{U \in B(L, \lambda)\}} e^{-V(u)} \right] = e^x Q_x\left[ 1_{\{\tau_L < \tau_0\}} 1_{\{w_{\tau_L} \in B(L, \lambda)\}} \right].
\]
As before, we have for \( \delta > 0 \),
\[
1_{\{w_{\tau_L} \in B(L, \lambda)\}} \leq \lambda^{-\delta} \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_L} a_k^\delta e^{-\delta(L - S_k)} / 2,
\]
where \( a_k := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}} 1 + e^{\Delta V(u)} \). Hence,
\[
Q_x\left[ 1_{\{\tau_L < \tau_0\}} 1_{\{w_{\tau_L} \in B(L, \lambda)\}} \right] \leq \lambda^{-\delta} Q_x\left[ 1_{\{\tau_L < \tau_0\}} \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_L} a_k^\delta e^{-\delta(L - S_k)} / 2 \right]
= \lambda^{-\delta} \sum_{k \geq 1} Q_x\left[ 1_{\{k \leq \tau_L < \tau_0\}} a_k^\delta e^{-\delta(L - S_k)} / 2 \right].
\]
Using Markov’s property at time \( k - 1 \), for every \( k \geq 1 \), yields
\[
Q_x\left[ 1_{\{\tau_L < \tau_0\}} 1_{\{w_{\tau_L} \in B(L, \lambda)\}} \right] \leq c' \lambda^{-\delta} Q_x\left[ 1_{\{\tau_L < \tau_0\}} \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_L} e^{-\delta(L - S_k)} / 2 \right],
\]
with \( c' = Q[a_k^\delta] < \infty \) if \( \delta > 0 \) is small enough by (1.3). We get by equation (4.17)
\[
Q_x\left[ 1_{\{\tau_L < \tau_0\}} 1_{\{w_{\tau_L} \in B(L, \lambda)\}} \right] \leq c \lambda^{-\delta} \frac{1 + x}{L}.
\]
Going back to (7.7), we obtain
\[
E_x\left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} 1_{\{U \in B(L, \lambda)\}} Z(u)[0, L + B] \right] \leq c \lambda^{-\delta} \frac{(1 + B)(1 + x)e^x}{L + B} \frac{L}{L},
\]
proving (7.4). \( \square \)

We are going to re-prove the following estimate of Aïdékon [3] but in a more general setting. We recall that \( \mathcal{L}[0, L] \) is the set of leaves in \( \mathcal{L}[0] \) which did not
hit \((L, +\infty)\), and \(Z[0, L] := \#L[0, L]\). We call similarly \(\mathcal{L}_g[0, L]\) the leaves in \(\mathcal{L}[0, L]\) which are in \(\mathcal{G}(L, \lambda)\), hence we have \(Z_g[0, L] := \#\mathcal{L}_g[0, L]\) the number of such leaves.

**Lemma 14.** Fix \(\lambda \geq 1\) and assume that \(\psi'(\varrho) = 0\) with \(\varrho = 1\). Under (1.3), there exists some constant \(c > 0\) such that for all \(L \geq 1\), and \(0 \leq x \leq L\),

\[
E_\lambda[(Z_g[0, L])^2] \leq c\lambda(1 + x)e^{xL/L^3}.
\]

**Proof.** Writing \(Z_g[0, L] = \sum_{v \in \mathcal{L}[0]} e^{V(v)}1_{\{\tau_L^-[v] > |v|\}}e^{-V(v)}1_{\{v \in \mathcal{G}(L, \lambda)\}}\), we deduce from Proposition 3 (applied to \(\mathcal{L}[0]\) and \(h(u) := e^{V(u)}\)) that

\[
E_\lambda[(Z_g[0, L])^2] = e^xQ_x[Z_g[0, L]e^{-S_{\varrho}}1_{\{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}}1_{\{w_{\varrho} \in \mathcal{G}(L, \lambda)\}}].
\]

We decompose \(Z_g[0, L]\) along the spine \((w_n, n \geq 0)\) as follows:

\[
Z_g[0, L] \leq 1 + \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_0^-} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{O}_k} Z^{(u)}[0, L],
\]

where \(Z^{(u)}[0, L] := \sum_{v \in \mathcal{T}^{(u)}} 1_{\{\tau_0^-(v) = |v| < \tau_L^+(v)\}}\) denotes the number of descendants of \(u\), touching 0 before \(L\) (\(\mathcal{T}^{(u)}\) means as before the subtree rooted at \(u\)). We have an inequality here since we dropped the condition that the particles must be in \(\mathcal{G}(L, \lambda)\). By Proposition 2, under \(Q_x\), conditioned on \(\mathcal{G}_\infty := \sigma\{\omega_j, S_j, \mathcal{O}_j, (V(u), u \in \mathcal{O}_j), j \geq 0\}\), \((Z^{(u)}[0, L])_{u \in \mathcal{O}_j, j \leq \tau_0^-}\) are independent, and each \(Z^{(u)}[0, L]\) is distributed as \((Z[0, L], P_{V(u)})\). In particular,

\[
Q_x[Z_g[0, L] | \mathcal{G}_\infty] \leq 1 + \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_0^-} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{O}_k} E_{V(u)}[Z[0, L]].
\]

Proposition 3 implies as well that for any \(z \in \mathbb{R}\),

\[
E_z[Z[0, L]] = e^zQ_x[e^{-S_{\varrho}}1_{\{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}}],
\]

which is zero if \(z > L\) and is 1 if \(z < 0\). By (4.13), we get that

\[
E_z[Z[0, L]] \leq ce^z \frac{L - z + 1}{L}1_{\{z \in [0, L]\}} + 1_{\{z < 0\}}.
\]

Hence,

\[
Q_x[Z_g[0, L] | \mathcal{G}_\infty] \leq 1 + \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_0^-} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{O}_k} \left(ce^{V(u)} \frac{L - V(u) + 1}{L}1_{\{V(u) \in [0, L]\}} + 1_{\{V(u) < 0\}}\right).
\]
For \( k < \tau_L^+ \), we observe that [recalling \( S_{k-1} = V(w_{k-1}) \leq L \)]

\[
\sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_k} e^{V(u)} \frac{L - V(u) + 1}{L} \mathbb{1}_{\{V(u) \in [0, L]\}}
= e^{S_{k-1}} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_k} e^{\Delta V(u)} \frac{L - V(u) + 1}{L} \mathbb{1}_{\{V(u) \in [0, L]\}}
\leq \frac{L - S_{k-1} + 1}{L} e^{S_{k-1}} a_k,
\]

with \( a_k := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_k} \{1 + e^{\Delta V(u)}\} \). If \( w_{\tau_0^-} \in \mathcal{G}(L, \lambda) \), it follows that for any \( k < \tau_0^- \),

\[
\sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_k} e^{V(u)} \frac{L - V(u) + 1}{L} \mathbb{1}_{\{V(u) \in [0, L]\}} \leq \lambda e^L \frac{L - S_{k-1} + 1}{L} e^{(S_{k-1} - L)/2}.
\]

Similarly, we observe that \( \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_k} 1_{\{V(u) < 0\}} \leq a_k \leq \lambda e^{L/2} \). Therefore, if \( w_{\tau_0^-} \in \mathcal{G}(L, \lambda) \), then

\[
Q_x[Z_g[0, L]\mathcal{G}_\infty] \leq 1 + c\lambda \frac{e^L}{L} \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_0^-} (L - S_{k-1} + 1)e^{(S_{k-1} - L)/2}.
\]

The equality (7.8) implies that

\[
E_x[(Z_g[0, L])^2] \leq e^x Q_x[e^{-S_{\tau_0^-}} 1_{\{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}}]
+ c\lambda \frac{e^{x+L}}{L} Q_x[e^{-S_{\tau_0^-}} 1_{\{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+\}} \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_0^-} (L - S_{k-1} + 1)e^{(S_{k-1} - L)/2}].
\]

The right-hand side is smaller than \( e^x(1 + c'(1 + x)\lambda L^L) \) by (4.18). It completes the proof of the lemma. \( \square \)

We look now at the progeny of a particle which went far to the right. Let the derivative martingale be defined by

\[
\partial W_n := - \sum_{|u|=n} V(u)e^{V(u)}, \quad n \geq 0.
\]

According to Theorems 5.1 and 5.2 in Biggins and Kyprianou [9], under \( P \), \( \partial W_n \) converges almost surely to \( \partial W_\infty \) which has infinite mean and is almost surely positive on \( \{T = \infty\} \).
Lemma 15. Assuming $\psi'(q_*) = 0$ with $q_* = 1$. Under (1.3), as $t \to \infty$, the law of $\#\mathcal{L}[0]$ under $P_t$, normalized by $e^t/t$ converges in distribution to $c^* \partial W_\infty$, with

$$c^* := \frac{Q[ e^{-S_{t_0}^*} - 1 ]}{-Q[S_{t_0}^* ]}.$$

Proof. By linear translation, it is equivalent to prove that under $P_0$, $\#\mathcal{L}[-t]$ normalized by $e^t/t$ converges in law to $c^* \partial W_\infty$. If we define

$$\partial W_{\mathcal{L}[0]} := - \sum_{u \in \mathcal{L}[0]} V(u)e^{V(u)},$$

then $\partial W_{\mathcal{L}[0]}$ converges almost surely to $\partial W_\infty$; cf. Biggins and Kyprianou [9], Theorem 5.3. We write

$$\partial W_{\mathcal{L}[-t]} = te^{-t} \left( \sum_{u \in \mathcal{L}[-t]} e^{V(u)+t} + \frac{1}{t} \eta_t \right),$$

with $\eta_t = -\sum_{u \in \mathcal{L}[-t]} (V(u) + t)e^{V(u)+t}$. At this stage, we may apply a result of Nerman [29] for the asymptotic behavior of $\frac{1}{\#\mathcal{L}[-t]} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{L}[-t]} e^{V(u)+t}$. Let $\xi := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{L}[0]} \delta_{-V(u)}$ be the point process formed by the (nonkilled) branching walk $V$ stopped at the line $\mathcal{L}[0]$. Generate a branching random walk $(V_\xi(u), u \in T_\xi)$ from the point process $\xi$, where $V_\xi, T_\xi$ are related to $\xi$ in the same way as $V, T$ are to $\mathcal{L}$. Define $\mathcal{L}_{\xi}[a] := \{u \in T_\xi : |u| = \tau_a^+(u)\}$ for all $a > 0$. Clearly $\mathcal{L}_{\xi}[t] = \mathcal{L}[-t]$ and

$$\frac{\sum_{u \in \mathcal{L}[-t]} e^{V(u)+t}}{\#\mathcal{L}[-t]} = \frac{\sum_{u \in T_\xi} \psi_u(t - \sigma_u)}{\sum_{u \in T_\xi} \phi_u(t - \sigma_u)},$$

where for any $u \in T_\xi$, $\sigma_u := -V_\xi(u)$ and

$$\psi_u(x) := 1_{\{x \geq 0\}} \sum_{v = u} e^{x - (\sigma_v - \sigma_u)} 1_{\{\sigma_v - \sigma_u > x\}}, \quad \phi_u(x) := 1_{\{x \geq 0\}} \sum_{v = u} 1_{\{\sigma_v - \sigma_u > x\}}.$$

Applying Theorem 6.3 in Nerman [29] (with $\alpha = 1$ and $\lambda_\alpha = \infty$ there) gives that conditioned on $\{T = \infty\}$, almost surely, when $t$ tends to infinity

$$\frac{\sum_{u \in T_\xi} \psi_u(t - \sigma_u)}{\sum_{u \in T_\xi} \phi_u(t - \sigma_u)} \to \frac{E[\sum_{|v|=1, v \in T_\xi} e^{-\sigma_v} \sigma_v]}{E[\sum_{|v|=1, v \in T_\xi} (1 - e^{-\sigma_v})]}.$$

Observe that $E[\sum_{|v|=1, v \in T_\xi} e^{-\sigma_v} \sigma_v] = -E[\sum_{u \in \mathcal{L}[0]} e^{V(u)} V(u)] = -Q[S_{t_0}^*]$, and similarly, $E[\sum_{|v|=1, v \in T_\xi} (1 - e^{-\sigma_v})] = Q[e^{-S_{t_0}^*}] - 1$. Therefore conditioned on $\{T = \infty\}$, almost surely

$$\frac{\sum_{u \in \mathcal{L}[-t]} e^{V(u)+t}}{\#\mathcal{L}[-t]} \to \frac{Q[S_{t_0}^*]}{1 - Q[e^{-S_{t_0}^*}]}, \quad t \to \infty.$$
On the other hand, following the same strategy, we get that conditioned on \(\{T = \infty\}\), we have almost surely
\[
\eta_t \rightarrow \frac{Q[(S_{t_0})^2/2]}{Q[e^{-S_{t_0}}] - 1}, \quad t \rightarrow \infty.
\]
Dividing both sides of (7.10) by \(#\mathcal{L}[-t]\), and using the fact that \(\partial W_L[−t]\) goes to \(\partial W_{∞}\), we deduce the lemma. \(\square\)

We also need the following simple technical lemma whose proof is postponed until Section 9:

**Lemma 16.** On some probability space \((\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)\), let \(\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} \delta_{Y_i}\) be a point process on \(\mathbb{R}_+\). Let \(\{\Gamma_i, i \geq 1\}\) be a sequence of i.i.d. random variables on \(\mathbb{R}_+\), independent of \(\sigma\{\xi, Y_i, 1 \leq i \leq \xi\}\). Assume that for some \(p > 0\) and \(a > 0\),
\[
P(\Gamma_1 > t) = (a + o(1))t^{-p}, \quad t \rightarrow \infty.
\]

(i) If \(p = 1\) and if there exists some \(\delta > 0\) such that \(\mathbb{E}[\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i^{1+\delta}] < \infty\), then
\[
\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} t^p P\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i \Gamma_i > t\right) = a \mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i\right].
\]

(ii) If \(p > 1\) and if there exists some \(\delta > 0\) such that \(\mathbb{E}[\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} (1 + Y_i)]^{p+\delta} < \infty\), then
\[
\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} t^p P\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i \Gamma_i > t\right) = a \mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i^p\right].
\]

In the critical case, the branching random walk goes to \(-\infty\). In particular, almost surely, \(H(L) = 0\) if \(L\) is large enough. Fix \(\lambda \geq 1\). For \(L \geq 1\), let \(\mu_{\lambda,L} := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} \delta_{V(u) - L} 1_{[u \in \mathcal{G}(L, \lambda)]}\). Then Proposition 1 implies that \(\mu_{\lambda,L}\) under \(P(\cdot|H(L) > 0)\) converges when \(L \rightarrow \infty\) to \(\hat{\mu}_{\mathcal{B},\infty}\) defined in Proposition 1 with \(\mathcal{B}(u) := \lambda^{-2} (\sum_{v \in \Omega(u)} (1 + e^{\Delta V(v)}))^2\). We will write \(\hat{\mu}_{\lambda,\infty} := \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} \delta_{x_i}\) instead of \(\hat{\mu}_{\mathcal{B},\infty}\). Since the measures \(\hat{\mu}_{\lambda,\infty}\) are increasing in \(\lambda\), we can assume that the labeling \((x_i)_i\) does not depend on \(\lambda \geq 1\). We write similarly \(\mu_{\lambda,\infty} := \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} \delta_{x_i}\) for the measure \(\mu_{\mathcal{B},\infty}\) given by Proposition 1, and we know that the Radon–Nikodym derivative of \(\hat{\mu}_{\lambda,\infty}\) with respect to \(\mu_{\lambda,\infty}\) is \(\frac{\text{d}Q^{-1}}{Q}\). Notice that if \(\xi = 0\), then \(\hat{\mu}_{\lambda,\infty}\) is the measure zero.

**Lemma 17.** Assuming \(\psi'(q_*) = 0\) with \(q_* = 1\) and (1.3), fix \(\lambda \geq 1\) and let \(\hat{\mu}_{\lambda,\infty}\) and \(\mu_{\lambda,\infty}\) be as above. Under \(Q\), let \((\partial W_{\infty}^{(i)}, i \geq 1)\) be a sequence of i.i.d.
random variables, independent of \( \hat{\mu}_{\lambda, \infty} \) and of common law that of \( \partial W_\infty \) under \( P \).

For any \( \lambda \geq 1 \), we have

\[
\lim_{t \to \infty} t Q\left( \sum_{i=1}^{\xi_1} e^{x_i} \partial W_\infty^{(i)} > t \right) = \frac{Q[|\mathcal{H}|^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{\xi_1} e^{x_i}]}{Q[|\mathcal{H}|^{-1}]}.
\]

Moreover, for any \( c > 0 \),

\[
\lim_{\lambda \to \infty} \lambda^2 Q\left( \sum_{i=1}^{\xi_1} e^{x_i} \partial W_\infty^{(i)} > c \lambda^2 \right) = \frac{1}{cQ[|\mathcal{H}|^{-1}]}.
\]

**Proof.** For any \( i \geq 1 \), by Theorem 1.2 in [10],

\[
Q(\partial W_\infty^{(i)} > t) = P(\partial W_\infty > t) \sim \frac{1}{t}, \quad t \to \infty.
\]

In order to prove (7.11), we shall apply Lemma 16(i) and it is enough to show that there exists some \( \delta > 0 \) such that

\[
Q\left[ \sum_{i=1}^{\xi_1} \left( 1 + e^{x_i} \right)^{1+\delta} \right] < \infty.
\]

Remark that \( \hat{\mu}_{\lambda, \infty} \) has the support contained in \( \mathbb{R}_+ \), hence for \( \delta > 0 \),

\[
Q\left[ \sum_{i=1}^{\xi_1} e^{(1+\delta)x_i} \right] \leq 2^{1+\delta} Q\left[ \sum_{i=1}^{\xi_1} e^{(1+\delta)x_i} \right].
\]

We are going to prove a stronger statement: for \( \hat{\mu}_\infty \) the point process defined in Theorem 3(iii), we have

\[
Q\left[ \int \hat{\mu}_\infty(dx) e^{(1+\delta)x} \right] < \infty.
\]

The statement (7.14) implies the corresponding integrability for \( \hat{\mu}_{\lambda, \infty} \) since \( \hat{\mu}_{\lambda, \infty} \) is stochastically dominated by \( \hat{\mu}_\infty \). To prove (7.14), we consider \( \chi(L) := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} e^{(1+\delta)(V(u) - L)} \) and prove first that, under \( P(\cdot | \mathcal{H}(L) \neq \emptyset) \), \( \chi(L) \) converges in law to \( \int \hat{\mu}_\infty(dx) e^{(1+\delta)x} \). In order to apply the convergence in law of Theorem 3(iii), we need some tightness result. We claim that

\[
\sup_{L \geq 1} P_x(\exists i \in [1, H(L)] : V(u^{(i)}) - L > K \mid H(L) > 0) = o_K(1),
\]

where we order the set of particles in \( \mathcal{H}(L) \) (eventually empty) in an arbitrary way: \( \mathcal{H}(L) = \{u^{(i)}, 1 \leq i \leq H(L)\} \). Markov’s inequality yields that the probability term in (7.15) is smaller than

\[
e^{-K} e^{-L} \mathbb{E}_x \left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} e^{V(u)} \right] P_x(H(L) > 0)^{-1}
\]

(7.16)

\[
\leq c e^{-K} \mathbb{E}_x \left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} e^{V(u)} \right],
\]

where the inequality is a consequence of Theorem 3(i). To prove the claimed tightness result it is sufficient to show that there exists some constant \( c > 0 \) such that
for any $x \geq 0$ and $L \geq \max(1, x)$ we have

\[(7.17)\]
\[
E_x \left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} e^{V(u)} \right] \leq c(1 + x) \frac{e^x}{L}.
\]

To see it, a change of measure from $P_x$ to $Q_x$ by Proposition 3 is applied to $C_L$ and $h(u) := e^{V(u)}$, and we find that

\[
E_x \left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} e^{V(u)} \right] = e^x Q_x (\tau_L^+ < \tau_0^-).
\]

Then (4.12) implies (7.17). Assembling (7.16) and (7.17) yields (7.15) and allows us to apply Theorem 3(iii) to obtain the convergence in distribution, under $P(\cdot | \mathcal{H}(L) \neq \emptyset)$, of $\mathcal{X}(L)$ toward $\int \hat{\mu}_\infty (dx) e(1 + \delta)x$.

Then (7.14) will hold once we have checked that $E[\mathcal{X}(L) | \mathcal{H}(L) \neq \emptyset]$ is bounded on $L$. By Theorem 3(i) with $\rho_* = 1$, it is enough to show that

\[(7.18)\]
\[
E[\mathcal{X}(L)] \leq c \frac{e^{-L}}{L}.
\]

But by the change of measure,

\[
E[\mathcal{X}(L)] = e^{-L} Q\left[ e^{\delta(S_L - L)}, \tau_L^+ < \tau_0^- \right].
\]

The above expectation $Q[\cdot]$ is less than $\frac{c}{L}$ by applying (4.13) to the random walk $(\delta(L - S_j))_{j \geq 0}$ (the integrability is guaranteed if $\delta$ is sufficiently small). This proves (7.18) and a fortiori (7.11).

Recall that by (7.14) and Lemma 16(i), if we write $\hat{\mu}_\infty = \sum_{i=1}^{\zeta} \delta_{\{x_i\}}$, then

\[
Q\left( \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\zeta}} e^{x_i} \partial W_\infty > t \right) \sim \frac{Q[\zeta - 1] \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\zeta}} e^{x_i}}{Q[\zeta - 1]} \frac{1}{t} = \frac{1}{Q[\zeta - 1]} \frac{1}{t}, \quad t \to \infty
\]

since $\zeta = \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\zeta}} e^{x_i}$ by definition; see (6.27). We have already observed that $\hat{\mu}_{\lambda, \infty}$ is stochastically nondecreasing in $\lambda$ and is dominated by $\hat{\mu}_\infty$ ($\hat{\mu}_\infty$ corresponds to $\hat{\mu}_{\lambda, \infty}$ with $\lambda = \infty$). Then $\limsup_{\lambda \to \infty} \lambda^2 Q(\sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\zeta}} e^{x_i} \partial W_\infty > c\lambda^2) \leq \limsup_{\lambda \to \infty} \lambda^2 Q(\sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\zeta}} e^{x_i} \partial W_\infty > c\lambda^2)$ which is $\frac{1}{cQ[\zeta - 1]}$, yielding the upper bound in (7.12).

For the lower bound, let $\lambda_0 > 1$ and by the monotonicity in $\hat{\mu}_\lambda$,

\[
\liminf_{\lambda \to \infty} \lambda^2 Q\left( \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\zeta}} e^{x_i} \partial W_\infty > c\lambda^2 \right) \geq \liminf_{\lambda \to \infty} \lambda^2 Q\left( \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\zeta}} e^{x_i} \partial W_\infty > c\lambda^2 \right)
\]
\[
= \frac{Q[\zeta - 1] \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\zeta}} e^{x_i}}{cQ[\zeta - 1]}.
\]
by applying (7.11) to $\hat{\mu}_{\lambda_0, \infty}$. Letting $\lambda_0 \to \infty$ and noting that $\sum_{i=1}^{\xi_{\lambda_0}} e^{x_i} = \int e^{x} \mu_{\lambda_0, \infty}(dx) \to \eta$, this gives the lower bound of (7.12). □

We now have all the ingredients to prove Theorem 2 in the critical case.

**Proof of Theorem 2(i), (Critical Case).**

**Lower bound of Theorem 2(i).** Recall that we have assumed $\varrho_\ast = 1$ by linear transformation. Fix a constant $A > 0$. Consider $n \to \infty$, and let $L_n, A := \log n + \log \log n - A$. We recall from (1.10) that $H(L_n, A) := \# H(L_n, A)$ is the number of particles that hit level $L_n, A$ before touching 0. Recall (7.1). We call $H_g(L_n, A) := \# H_g(L_n, A)$ the number of particles in $H(L_n, A)$ which are in $G(L_n, \lambda)$ with $\lambda := e^{A/2}$.

(7.19) $H_g(L_n, A) := H(L_n, A) \cap \mathcal{G}(L_n, e^{A/2})$.

Let us order the set of particles in $H_g(L_n, A)$ (eventually empty) in an arbitrary way, $H_g(L_n, A) = \{ u(i), 1 \leq i \leq H_g(L_n, A) \}$. Denote by $\# L(i)[0]$ the number of descendants of the $i$th particle $u(i)$ which are absorbed at 0. Then

$$P_x(\# L[0] > n) \geq P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_g(L_n, A)} \# L(i)[0] > n \right) = P_x(H(L_n, A) > 0) P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_g(L_n, A)} \# L(i)[0] > n \bigg| H(L_n, A) > 0 \right).$$

By Theorem 3(i), $P_x(H(L_n, A) > 0) \sim \frac{Q^{[\theta^{-1}]}_R(x)}{C_R} R(x) e^{x - L_n, A} \mu_{L_n, A}$ as $n \to \infty$. On the other hand, conditioned on $H_g(L_n, A)$ and on $\{ V(u(i)), 1 \leq i \leq H_g(L_n, A) \}$, $(\# L(i)[0])_{1 \leq i \leq H_g(L_n, A)}$ are independent, and each $\# L(i)[0]$ is distributed as $\# L[0]$ under $P_{V(u(i))}$.

By Lemma 15, if we denote by $B(i) := \# L(i)[0] e^{-V(u(i))} V(u(i))$, then conditioned on $H_g(L_n, A)$ and on $\{ V(u(i)), 1 \leq i \leq H_g(L_n, A) \}$, for each $i$, $B(i)$ converges in law to $c^* \partial W^{(i)}_\infty$ as $n \to \infty$, where $\partial W^{(i)}_\infty, i \geq 1$, is a sequence of i.i.d. random variables of common law that of $(\partial W_\infty, \mu_{L_n, A})$, and independent of $\mu_{L_n, A}$. We may assume by Skorohod’s representation theorem that for each $i$, $B(i)$ converges almost surely to $c^* \partial W^{(i)}_\infty$.

Let $\varepsilon \in (0, 1)$. First, we want to show that we can restrict to the event $E(L_n, A) := \{ B(i) > (1 - \varepsilon) e^{x} \partial W^{(i)}_\infty, \forall i : 1 \leq i \leq H_g(L_n, A) \}$. We have

$$P_x(E(L_n, A)^c | H(L_n, A) > 0) \leq E_x[H_g(L_n, A) | H(L_n, A) > 0] \sup_{\varepsilon \geq L_n, A} P_x(\varepsilon e^{-\varepsilon} \# L[0] < (1 - \varepsilon) c^* \partial W_\infty) =: E_x[H_g(L_n, A) | H(L_n, A) > 0] \eta_{L_n, A}.$$
The term $\eta_{L_n,A}$ goes to zero as $n \to \infty$ by Lemma 15. By (7.17) and Theorem 3(i), we have

$$E_x[H_g(L_n,A) | H(L_n,A) > 0] \leq e^{-L_n,A} E_x \left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L_n,A)} e^{V(u)} | H(L_n,A) > 0 \right] \leq c$$

for some positive constant $c = c(x)$ which depends on $x$. Hence, $P_x(E(L_n,A)^c | H(L_n,A) > 0) = o_{L_n,A}(1)$, where $o_{L_n,A}(1) \to 0$ as $L_n,A \to \infty$. We have

$$P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_g(L_n,A)} \# \mathcal{L}^{(i)}[0] > n | H(L_n,A) > 0 \right) = P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_g(L_n,A)} e^{V(u^{(i)})} \frac{B^{(i)}}{V(u^{(i)})} > n, E(L_n,A) | H(L_n,A) > 0 \right) \geq P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_g(L_n,A)} e^{V(u^{(i)})} \frac{B^{(i)}}{V(u^{(i)})} > n, E(L_n,A) | H(L_n,A) > 0 \right) \geq P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_g(L_n,A)} e^{V(u^{(i)})} \frac{\partial W^{(i)}}{V(u^{(i)})} > n, E(L_n,A) | H(L_n,A) > 0 \right) + o_{L_n,A}(1).$$

Observe that

$$P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_g(L_n,A)} e^{V(u^{(i)})} \frac{\partial W^{(i)}}{V(u^{(i)})} > n, E(L_n,A) | H(L_n,A) > 0 \right) \geq P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_g(L_n,A)} e^{V(u^{(i)})} \frac{\partial W^{(i)}}{V(u^{(i)})} > \frac{n}{c^*(1-\epsilon)}, E(L_n,A) | H(L_n,A) > 0 \right) \geq P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_g(L_n,A)} e^{V(u^{(i)})} \frac{\partial W^{(i)}}{V(u^{(i)})} > \frac{n}{c^*(1-\epsilon)} | H(L_n,A) > 0 \right) + o_{L_n,A}(1).$$

In order to apply the convergence in law of Proposition 1, we need some tightness results. Recalling (7.15), it is sufficient to show that

$$\sup_{L \geq 1} P_x (\exists i \in [1, H(L)] : \partial W^{(i)} > K | H(L) > 0) = o_K(1).$$

Since the $\partial W^{(i)}$’s are i.i.d. copies of $\partial W$ and independent of $\mu_{L_n,A}$, Markov’s inequality yields that the probability term in the previous equation is smaller than

$$K^{-1/2} E_x[H(L) | H(L) > 0] E[\sqrt{\partial W}] = O(K^{-1/2}).$$
by using (7.17), Theorem 3(i) and (7.13). This yields the claimed tightness and allows us to apply Proposition 1 to get
\[
\lim_{n \to \infty} P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_e(L_n,A)} \frac{e^{V(u(i))}}{V(u(i))} \partial W^{(i)}_\infty < \frac{n}{c^*(1-\varepsilon)} | H(L_n,A) > 0 \right)
\]
(7.23)
\[
= Q \left( \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\mu}_\lambda} e^{\xi_i} \partial W^{(i)}_\infty > \frac{e^A}{c^*(1-\varepsilon)} \right),
\]
where \( \hat{\mu}_{\lambda,\infty} := \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\mu}} \delta_{x_i} \) is the point process defined before Lemma 17, and we recall that \( \lambda := e^{A/2} \). By (7.20)–(7.23) and the definition of \( L_n,A \), we deduce that for any \( A > 0 \),
\[
\liminf_{n \to \infty} n (\log n)^2 P_x (L[0] > n) \geq Q[\Re - 1] C_R e^{x A} Q \left( \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\mu}_\lambda} e^{\xi_i} \partial W^{(i)}_\infty > \lambda^2 \right).
\]
We let \( \varepsilon \to 0 \) to get
\[
\liminf_{n \to \infty} n (\log n)^2 P_x (\#L[0] > n) \geq R(x) e^x C(A),
\]
with \( C(A) := \frac{Q[\Re - 1] e^{A} Q(\sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\mu}_\lambda} e^{\xi_i} c^* \partial W^{(i)}_\infty > \lambda^2)}{C_R} \).

By Lemma 17, we have \( C(A) \to \frac{c^*}{C_R} \) as \( A \to \infty \), which leads to
\[
\liminf_{n \to \infty} n (\log n)^2 P_x (\#L[0] > n) \geq R(x) e^x \frac{c^*}{C_R}.
\]

Upper bound of Theorem 2(i). We notice that we showed in fact that, for any \( A > 0 \),
\[
\liminf_{n \to \infty} n (\log n)^2 P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_e(L_n,A)} \#L^{(i)}[0] > n \right) \geq R(x) e^x C(A).
\]
Repeating the same argument with this time \( E'(L_n,A) := \{ B^{(i)} < (1+\varepsilon) \partial W^{(i)} \}; \forall i : 1 \leq i \leq H_e(L_n,A) \} \) yields that \( C(A) \) is also a limsup. Therefore,
\[
\limsup_{n \to \infty} n (\log n)^2 P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_e(L_n,A)} \#L^{(i)}[0] > n \right) = R(x) e^x C(A),
\]
with \( C(A) \to \frac{c^*}{C_R} \) as \( A \to \infty \).

Then, let \( \eta > 0 \) and \( \varepsilon > 0 \). We take again \( L_{n,A} := \log n + \log \log n - A \) and \( \lambda := e^{A/2} \). Markov’s inequality with (7.3) implies that if \( A \) is taken large enough,
\[
\limsup_{n \to \infty} n (\log n)^2 P_x (Z_b[0, L_{n,A}] > \eta n) \leq \varepsilon.
\]
By Theorem 3(i), we can choose $B > 0$ large enough such that
\[(7.25) \quad \limsup_n n (\log n)^2 P_x \left( H(L_n + B) > 0 \right) \leq \varepsilon. \]

On the other hand, by (7.4) and Markov’s inequality, we obtain that for $A$ large enough,
\[
(7.26) \quad \limsup_n n (\log n)^2 P_x \left( \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L_n, \lambda)} 1_{\{u \in B(L_n, \lambda)\}} |\mathcal{L}(u)[0] > \eta n, H(L_n + B) = 0 \} \right) 
\leq E_x \left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L_n, \lambda)} 1_{\{u \in B(L_n, \lambda)\}} Z(u)[0, L_n + B] \right] 
\leq \varepsilon,
\]
where the notation $Z(u)[\cdot, \cdot]$ was introduced in Lemma 13. Finally, it yields that
\[(7.27) \quad \limsup_n n (\log n)^2 P_x \left( \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L_n, \lambda)} 1_{\{u \in B(L_n, \lambda)\}} |\mathcal{L}(u)[0] > \eta n \} \right) \leq 2\varepsilon. \]

We now show that the “good particles” which never touch $L_{n,A}$ are negligible when $A$ is large. We recall that $Z_g(0, L_{n,A})$ is the number of particles in $G(L_n, \lambda)$ that touch 0 before $L_{n,A}$. By Lemma 14,
\[
E_x[Z_g(0, L_{n,A})^2] \leq c(1 + x)e^{L_{n,A}/L_{n,A}^3}.
\]

Therefore, by the choice of $L_{n,A}$ and $\lambda$ we have that for any fixed $\eta > 0$,
\[
\limsup_{n \to \infty} n (\log n)^2 P_x \left( Z_g(0, L_{n,A}) > \eta n \right) \leq \frac{c(1 + x)e^x e^{-A/2}}{\eta^2},
\]
which is less than $\varepsilon$ if $A$ is large enough. By the triangle inequality, for any $0 < \eta < 1/3$ and any $\varepsilon > 0$, we deduce that if $A$ is large enough,
\[
P_x(\#\mathcal{L}[0] > n) \leq P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_g(L_n, \lambda)} \#\mathcal{L}^{(i)}[0] > (1 - 3\eta)n \right) + \frac{4\varepsilon}{n (\log n)^2}.
\]

From this and (7.24), by letting $A \to \infty$ and $\eta \to 0$, we deduce the upper bound
\[
\limsup_{n \to \infty} n (\log n)^2 P_x \left( \#\mathcal{L}[0] > n \right) \leq R(x) e^{x c^{*}/C_R}.
\]

Thus we have
\[
\lim_{n \to \infty} n (\log n)^2 P_x \left( \#\mathcal{L}[0] > n \right) = R(x) e^{x c^{*}/C_R},
\]
with $c^{*} = \frac{e^{\varepsilon}}{C_R}$. Finally, we recall that $C_R$ is the limit of $R(x)/x$ as $x \to \infty$, $R(x)$ being the renewal function for the descending ladder heights. The renewal theorem implies that $C_R = Q[-S_{-t_0}]^{-1}$. Hence, from the value of $c^{*}$ in (7.9), we end up with $c^{*} = Q[e^{-S_{-t_0}} - 1]$ indeed. \(\square\)
8. Proof of Theorem 2: The subcritical case. We treat here the subcritical case \( \psi'(\varrho^*) < 0 \). Define a new probability measure \( Q^{(\varrho_-)} \) by (5.3) with \( h(u) = e^{\varrho - V(u)} \) for all \( u \in T \). Then for any \( x \in \mathbb{R} \),

\[
\frac{dQ^{(\varrho_-)}_x}{dP_x}_{|_{\mathcal{F}_n}} = e^{-\varrho - x} \sum_{|u| = n} e^{\varrho - V(u)}, \quad n \geq 0.
\]

We recall that \( Q \) satisfies (5.16) with \( \varrho = \varrho^* + \).

Applying Proposition 2, we see that the trajectory of the spine \( (S_n) \) is a random walk that drifts to \( +\infty \) under \( Q \), and drifts to \( -\infty \) under \( Q^{(\varrho_-)} \), in fact, \( Q\{S_1 = \psi'(\varrho^*)_+ > 0 \} \) and \( Q^{(\varrho_-)}\{S_1 = \psi'(\varrho^-) < 0 \} \). In particular [see (4.20) and (4.21), changing \( S_1 \) in \( -S_1 \) for \( Q^{(\varrho_-)} \)], we deduce the existence of \( C_R > 0 \) such that

\[
Q^{(\varrho_-)}(\tau^+_L < \tau^-_0) \sim \frac{1}{C_R} e^{(\varrho - \varrho^*)L}.
\]

(8.1)

\[
Q(\tau^+_L < \tau^-_0) \sim \frac{1}{C_R}, \quad L \to \infty,
\]

(8.2)

(the second equivalence follows from Lemma 3). The strategy of the proof of Theorem 2(ii) is in the same spirit as in the critical case (i). Recall (1.8) that \( L[0] \) denotes the set of leaves of the killed branching random walk. We give first an estimate on the moments of \( \#L[0] \).

**Lemma 18.** For any integer \( k < \frac{\varrho^*}{\varrho_-} \), there exists some constant \( c_k > 0 \) such that for any \( x \geq 0 \),

\[
E_x[(\#L[0])^k] \leq c_k e^{k \varrho - x}.
\]

**Proof of Lemma 18.** We give a proof by induction on \( k \). Changing measure from \( P_x \) to \( Q^{(\varrho_-)}_x \) with Proposition 3 (with \( \mathcal{L}[0] \) and \( h(u) = e^\varrho - V(u) \) for \( u \in T \)) yields the identity

\[
E_x[(\#L[0])^k] = Q^{(\varrho_-)}_x[e^{-\varrho - S^-_0} (\#L[0])^{k-1}].
\]

(8.2)

By (4.22), the case \( k = 1 \) holds. Suppose that it is true for \( k - 1 \geq 1 \), and that \( 2 \leq k < \frac{\varrho^*}{\varrho_-} \). We decompose \( \#L[0] \) along the spine

\[
\#L[0] = 1 + \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau^-_0} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{O}_\ell} \#L^{(u)}[0],
\]

where \( \#L^{(u)}[0] \) is the number of particles descended from \( u \) absorbed at 0. We mention that if \( V(u) < 0 \), then \( \#L^{(u)}[0] = 1 \). Conditionally on \( \mathcal{G}_\infty \),
$(\#\mathcal{L}^{(u)}[0])_{u \in \mathcal{U}_{j+1}}$, $0 \leq j < \tau_0^-$, are independent and each $(\#\mathcal{L}^{(u)}[0])$ is distributed as $(\#\mathcal{L}[0], P_{V(u)})$. By the triangle inequality,

$$(Q^{(\varrho,-)}_x[(\#\mathcal{L}[0])^{k-1}|\mathcal{G}_\infty])^{1/(k-1)} \leq 1 + \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_0^-} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_\ell} (Q^{(\varrho,-)}_x[(\#\mathcal{L}^{(u)}[0])^{k-1}|\mathcal{G}_\infty])^{1/(k-1)}.$$

For each $\ell$ and $u \in \mathcal{U}_\ell$, we have from our induction assumption

$$(Q^{(\varrho,-)}_x[(\#\mathcal{L}^{(u)}[0])^{k-1}|\mathcal{G}_\infty]) \leq 1 + c e^{-V(u)} (\sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_0^-} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_\ell} \{1 + e^{\varrho - V(u)}\})^{1/(k-1)}.$$

Therefore we get

$$(Q^{(\varrho,-)}_x[(\#\mathcal{L}[0])^{k-1}|\mathcal{G}_\infty])^{1/(k-1)} \leq 1 + c \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_0^-} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_\ell} (1 + e^{\varrho - V(u)}).$$

In view of (8.2), we deduce that

$$\mathbb{E}_x[(\#\mathcal{L}[0])^k] \leq c e^{\varrho - x} \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_0^-} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_\ell} \{1 + e^{\varrho - V(u)}\}^{1/(k-1)} \leq c e^{\varrho - x} \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_0^-} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_\ell} e^{\varrho - S_{\ell-1} a_{\ell}}^{1/(k-1)},$$

where for any $\ell \geq 1$, $a_{\ell} := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_\ell} \{1 + e^{\varrho - \Delta V(u)}\}$. Plainly Corollary 1 also holds with $\varrho = \varrho_-$, which implies that under $Q^{(\varrho,-)}_x$, the random variables $(S_{\ell} - S_{\ell-1}, a_{\ell})_{\ell \geq 1}$ are i.i.d. (whose law does not depend on $x$). Moreover,

$$(Q^{(\varrho,-)}_x[(1 + 1_{S_i < 0}) e^{-\varrho - S_i} a_i^{k-1}] \leq \mathbb{E} \left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_j} (1 + e^{\varrho - V(u)}) \right]^{1/(k-1)} < \infty,$$

by (1.4). Applying (4.25) with $b = \varrho_-, p = k - 1$, $\gamma = \varrho_+ - \varrho_-$ (recalling that $\varrho_+ / \varrho_- > k \geq 2$), we get $Q^{(\varrho,-)}_x e^{-\varrho - S_{\tau_0}} \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_0} e^{\varrho - S_{\ell-1} a_{\ell}}^{1/(k-1)} \leq c e^{(k-1)e^{-x}}$, proving the lemma. \hfill $\Box$

We introduce the analog of good and bad particles in the subcritical case, and we feel free to use the same notation. For $\lambda > 1$, $L > 1$, we say now that

$$u \in \mathcal{B}(L, \lambda) \text{ if there exists some } 1 \leq j \leq |u|:\n
(8.4) \quad \sum_{v: \mathcal{V} = u_{j-1}} (1 + e^{\varrho - \Delta V(v)}) > \lambda e^{\varrho - (L - V(u_{j-1}))},$$

and \( u \in \mathcal{G}(L, \lambda) \) otherwise, and we define again
\[
Z_g[0, L] := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{G}(L, \lambda)} 1_{\{\tau_0^-(u) = |u| < \tau_L^+(u)\}},
\]
(8.5)
\[
Z_b[0, L] := \sum_{u \in \overline{\mathcal{B}}(L, \lambda)} 1_{\{\tau_0^-(u) = |u| < \tau_L^+(u)\}}.
\]

Recall the notation \( \delta^* \) in (1.4).

**Lemma 19.** Let \( k^* := \lceil \varrho + \varrho^- \rceil + 1 \) be the smallest integer such that \( k^* > \frac{\varrho^+}{\varrho^-} \). Let \( 0 < \delta_2 < \min(\frac{\delta^*}{2}, k^* - \frac{\varrho^+}{\varrho^-}) \).

(i) There exists some constant \( c > 0 \) such that for any \( L > x \geq 0 \),
\[
E_x\left[ Z_g[0, L]^{k^*} \right] \leq c\lambda^{-k^*} e^{\varrho^- + \delta_2} e^{e^{\varrho^+ - \varrho^-} L}.
\]

(ii) For \( q := \frac{\varrho^+}{\varrho^-} + \delta_2 \), there exists some constant \( c' := c'(\lambda, q) > 0 \) such that for any \( L > x \geq 0 \),
\[
E_x\left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L) \cap \mathcal{G}(L, \lambda)} e^{\varrho^- - V(u)} \right]^{q} \leq c' e^{e^{\varrho^- - \varrho^+} L}, \quad 0 \leq x < L.
\]

(iii) If we assume (1.9), then
\[
E_x\left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} e^{\varrho^- - V(u)} \right]^{k^*} \leq c e^{e^{\varrho^- - \varrho^+} L}, \quad 0 \leq x < L.
\]

**Proof of Lemma 19.** (i) Let \( k \) be an integer. By changing of measure from \( \mathbf{P}_x \) to \( \mathbf{Q}_x^{(\varrho^-)} \), we obtain
\[
E_x\left[ (Z_g[0, L])^k \right] = e^{e^{\varrho^-} \mathbf{Q}_x^{(\varrho^-)}} e^{-e^{\varrho^-} \mathbf{S}_{\varrho^-}} 1_{\{w_0^- \in \mathcal{G}(L, \lambda)\}} (Z_g[0, L])^{k-1}, \tau_0^- < \tau_L^+.
\]

By decomposing the tree \( T \) along the spine \( (w_\ell) \), we get that
\[
Z_g[0, L] \leq Z[0, L] = 1 + \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_0^-} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{T}_\ell} Z^{(u)}[0, L], \quad \tau_0^- < \tau_L^+.
\]

where \( Z^{(u)}[0, L] := \sum_{v \in \mathcal{T}(u)} 1_{\{\tau_0^- (v) = |v| < \tau_L^+(v)\}} \) denotes the number of descendants of \( u \), touching 0 before \( L \) (\( \mathcal{T}(u) \) means as before the subtree rooted at \( u \)). By Proposition 2, under \( \mathbf{Q}_x \), conditioned on \( \mathcal{G}_\infty = \{\omega_j, S_j, \mathcal{U}_j, (V(u), u \in \mathcal{U}_j), j \geq 0\} \), the random variables \( (Z^{(u)}[0, L])_{u \in \mathcal{U}_\ell, \ell \leq \tau_0^-} \) are independent and each \( Z^{(u)}[0, L] \)
is distributed as \((Z[0, L], P_{V(u)})\). Conditioning and using the triangle inequality, we have
\[
(Q_{x}^{(\varrho^-)}[(Z_{g}[0, L])^{k-1}|G_{\infty}])^{1/(k-1)} \leq 1 + \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_{0}^-} \sum_{u \in \Theta_{\ell}} (Q_{x}^{(\varrho^-)}[(Z^{(u)}[0, L])^{k-1}|G_{\infty}])^{1/(k-1)}.
\]
(8.8)

Assume \(k < (\varrho_+/\varrho_-) + 1\). From Lemma 18, since \(Z^{(u)}[0, L] \leq \#L^{(u)}[0]\) and \(k - 1 < \varrho_+/\varrho_-\), we know that
\[
(Q_{x}^{(\varrho^-)}[(Z^{(u)}[0, L])^{k-1}|G_{\infty}])^{1/(k-1)} \leq ce^{\varrho-V(u)} + 1_{V(u)<0},
\]
where the indicator comes from \(Z^{(u)}[0, L] = 1\) if \(V(u) < 0\). It follows that
\[
E_x[(Z_{g}[0, L])^{k}] \leq ce^{e^{-S_{0}^-}} + ce^{e^{-S_{0}^-}} \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_{0}^-} \sum_{u \in \Theta_{\ell}} (1 + e^{e^{-S_{V(u)}}})^{k-1}.
\]
(8.9)
\[
= ce^{e^{-S_{0}^-}} + ce^{e^{-S_{0}^-}} A_{(8.9)}.
\]

with some larger constant \(c > 0\) and the obvious definition of \(A_{(8.9)}\) for the remaining expectation under \(Q_{x}^{(\varrho^-)}\). By (4.22), see also Theorem 4 in [25] applied to \(-S\) at \(\tau_{x}^+, Q_{x}^{(\varrho^-)}[e^{-e^{-S_{0}^-}}] \leq c\). Therefore we have shown that for all \(k < (\varrho_+/\varrho_-) + 1\),
\[
E_x[(Z_{g}[0, L])^{k}] \leq c'e^{e^{-S_{0}^-}} + ce^{e^{-S_{0}^-}} A_{(8.9)}.
\]
(8.10)

To estimate \(A_{(8.9)}\), let us adopt the notation \(a_{\ell}:\) for any \(\ell \geq 1\), \(a_{\ell} := \sum_{u \in \Theta_{\ell}} (1 + e^{e^{-\Delta V(u)}})\), hence
\[
\sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_{0}^-} \sum_{u \in \Theta_{\ell}} (1 + e^{e^{-V(u)}}) \leq \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_{0}^-} e^{e^{-S_{\ell-1}} a_{\ell}}.
\]
On \(\{w_{\tau_{0}^-} \in G(L, \lambda)\}, a_{\ell} \leq \lambda^s e^{e^{e^{-V(u)-S_{\ell-1}}}}\) for any \(0 < s < 1\). It follows that
\[
A_{(8.9)} \leq \lambda^r(k) e^{e^{-S_{(k-1)L}}} L_{k}
\]
(8.11)
\[
\times Q_{x}^{(\varrho^-)} \left[ e^{-e^{-S_{0}^-}} \left( \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_{0}^-} e^{e^{-sS_{\ell-1}} a_{\ell}^{1-s}} \right)^{k-1} \right],
\]
for any \(0 < s < 1\) and \(k < (\varrho_+/\varrho_-) + 1\).

If \(\varrho_+/\varrho_-\) is not an integer, then \(k^* = \lfloor \varrho_+/\varrho_- \rfloor + 1\) and (8.11) holds for \(k = k^*\). Take
\[
s = \frac{k^* - \varrho_+/\varrho_- - \delta_2}{k^* - 1}.
\]
(8.12)
Notice that
\[ Q^{(\omega-)} \left[ (1 + 1_{S_1 < 0}) e^{-\varphi - S_1} a_1^{(1-s)(k^*-1)} \right] \leq E \left[ \sum_{|s|=1} (1 + e^{\varphi - V(u)}) \right]^{(1-s)(k^*-1)+1} < \infty, \]
\[ Q^{(\omega-)} \left[ e^{(1-s)\varphi - (k^*-1)S_1} \right] = e^{\psi(\varphi - (1-(s)(k^*-1)))} < \infty, \]
by (1.4). Under $Q^{(\omega-)}$, $(S_\ell - S_{\ell-1}, a_\ell^{1-s})_{\ell \geq 1}$ are i.i.d. Applying (4.26) (with $\alpha = 0$) to the expectation term $Q^{(\omega-)}[\cdot]$ in (8.11) with $\gamma = \varphi_+ - \varphi_-$, $b = \varphi_-$, $\eta = \varphi_-$, $p = k^* - 1$ and noticing that $pb > \gamma$, we get that if we take $k = k^*$ in (8.9), then
\[ A^{(8.9)} \leq c \lambda^{s(k^*-1)} e^{s\varphi -(k^*-1)L} e^{(\varphi_+ - \varphi_-(x-L))+(k^*-1)\varphi_+L} \]
\[ = c \lambda^{s(k^*-1)} e^{(\varphi_+ - \varphi_-)(x-L)+(k^*-1)\varphi_+L}. \]
This estimate with (8.10) proves (i) in the case that $\varphi_+ / \varphi_-$ is not an integer.

It remains to treat the case when $\varphi_+/\varphi_-$ is an integer. Then $k^* = \varphi_+/\varphi_- + 1$. Applying (8.9) to $k = k^* - 1$ (which is less than $\varphi_+/\varphi_- + 1$), we have that
\[ E_x[(Z_\varphi[0, L])^{k^*-1}] \]
\[ \leq c' e^{\varphi_+ - x} + ce^{\varphi_+ - x} Q^{(\omega-)} \left[ e^{-\varphi - S_0^+} \left( \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau^-_0} e^{\varphi - S_\ell-1} a_\ell \right)^{k^*-2} \right], \]
which by an application of (4.26) with $\alpha = 0$, $\gamma = \varphi_+ - \varphi_-$, $b = \varphi_-$, $p = k^* - 2 = \gamma / b$ [it is easy to check the integrability hypothesis in Lemma 8(ii)], yields that
\[ E_x[(Z_\varphi[0, L])^{k^*-1}] \leq c(1 + L - x) e^{\varphi_+ + x}, \quad 0 \leq x \leq L. \]
Moreover, $E_x[(Z_\varphi[0, L])^{k^*-1}]$ is 1 if $x < 0$ and 0 if $x > L$. Going back to (8.8) and (8.6) with now $k = k^*$, we obtain that
\[ E_x[(Z_\varphi[0, L])^{k^*}] \leq ce^{\varphi_+ - x} Q^{(\omega-)} \left[ 1 + e^{-\varphi - S_0^+} 1_{\{w_{\tau^-_0} \in \mathbb{G}(L, \lambda)\}} A^{k^*-1}, \tau^-_0 < \tau^+_L \right] \]
with
\[ A := \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau^-_0} \sum_{u \in \mathbb{G}_\ell} (1 + L - V(u))^{\varphi_-/\varphi_+} e^{\varphi_- V(u)} 1_{\{V(u) \in [0, L]\}} + 1_{\{V(u) < 0\}). \]

Observe that on $\{ \ell \leq \tau^-_0 < \tau^+_L \}$, $S_{\ell-1} \in [0, L]$. For any $u \in \mathbb{G}_\ell$ such that $V(u) \in [0, L]$, either $\Delta V(u) \geq 0$ then $(1 + L - V(u))^{\varphi_-/\varphi_+} \leq (1 + L - S_{\ell-1})^{\varphi_-/\varphi_+}$, or $\Delta V(u) < 0$, then $(1 + L - V(u))^{\varphi_-/\varphi_+} \leq (1 + L - S_{\ell-1})^{\varphi_-/\varphi_+} e^{\varphi_- V(u)} + \Delta V(u)$.
\[ |\Delta V(u)|^{\varphi} \leq (1 + L - S_{t_{\ell - 1}})^{\varphi} e^{\varphi - V(u)} + c(\varphi) e^{\varphi - S_{t_{\ell - 1}}}, \text{ with } c(\varphi) := \sup_{y \leq 0} |y|^{\varphi} e^{\varphi y} < \infty. \] It follows that there exists some \( c > 0 \) such that
\[
\sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_{t_{\ell - 1}}} ((1 + L - V(u))^{\varphi} e^{\varphi - V(u)} 1_{[V(u) \in [0, L]]} + 1_{[V(u) < 0]}) \leq c(1 + L - S_{t_{\ell - 1}})^{\varphi} e^{\varphi - S_{t_{\ell - 1}}} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_{t_{\ell - 1}}} (1 + e^{\varphi - \Delta V(u)}),
\]
which in turn is bounded by
\[ c(1 + L - S_{t_{\ell - 1}})^{\varphi} e^{\varphi - S_{t_{\ell - 1}}} \lambda^{s} e^{\varphi - (L - S_{t_{\ell - 1}})} a^{1-s}_{t_{\ell - 1}} \] since \( w_{t_{0}} \in G(L, \lambda) \), where \( 0 < s < 1 \) is as in (8.12). It follows that
\[
E_{x}[(Z_{g}[0, L])^{k^{*}}] \leq c' \lambda^{s(k^{*} - 1)} e^{\varphi - (k^{*} - 1)L} e^{\varphi - x}
\times Q_{x}^{(\varphi -) \left( e^{\varphi - S_{t_{0}}} \left( \sum_{\ell = 1}^{t_{0}} (1 + L - S_{t_{\ell - 1}})^{\varphi} a^{1-s}_{t_{\ell - 1}} e^{\varphi - (1-s)S_{t_{\ell - 1}}} \right) \right)^{k^{*} - 1}},
\]
\[
\tau_{0}^{-} < \tau_{L}^{+} \].

Again, we apply (4.26) with \( \alpha = \varphi / \varphi_{+} \) to \((S_{\ell} - S_{t_{\ell - 1}}, a^{1-s}_{\ell})_{\ell \geq 1} \) with \( \gamma = \varphi_{+} - \varphi_{-}, b = \varphi_{+} - (1 - s), \eta = \varphi_{-}, p = k^{*} - 1 > \gamma / b \) (the integrability hypothesis can be easily checked as before), which yields that
\[ E_{x}[(Z_{g}[0, L])^{k^{*}}] \leq c' \lambda^{s(k^{*} - 1)} e^{\varphi_{+} + (k^{*} - \varphi_{+}) L}, \] proving (i) in the case that \( \varphi_{+} / \varphi_{-} \) is an integer.

(ii) Write in this proof \( \Lambda := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L) \cap G(L, \lambda)} e^{\varphi - V(u)} \). Instead of \( Q_{x}^{(\varphi -)} \), we shall make use of the probability \( Q \) defined in (5.16) with \( \varphi = \varphi_{+} \) for the change of measure. We stress that under \( Q \), \((S_{n})\) drifts to \(+\infty\).

Firstly, we prove by induction on \( k \) that for any \( 1 \leq k \leq k^{*} - 1 \), there exists some constant \( c_{k} = c_{k}(\lambda) > 0 \) such that
\[ E_{x}[\Lambda^{k}] \leq c_{k} e^{\varphi_{+} x} e^{(k^{*} - \varphi_{+}) L}. \]

By the change of measure, we get that for \( k \geq 1 \),
\[
E_{x}[\Lambda^{k}] = e^{\varphi_{+} x} Q_{x}[e^{(\varphi - e_{\varphi_{+}}) S_{t_{L}^{+}}^{1} 1_{[w_{t_{L}^{+}} \in G(L, \lambda)]} \Lambda^{k-1}, \tau_{L}^{+} < \tau_{0}^{-}}]
= e^{\varphi_{+} x + (\varphi - e_{\varphi_{+}}) L} Q_{x}[e^{(\varphi - e_{\varphi_{+}}) T_{L}^{+} 1_{[w_{t_{L}^{+}} \in G(L, \lambda)]} \Lambda^{k-1}, \tau_{L}^{+} < \tau_{0}^{-}}],
\]
where \( T_{L}^{+} := S_{t_{L}^{+}} - L > 0 \). This yields the case \( k = 1 \) of (8.13).

Assume \( 2 \leq k \leq k^{*} - 1 \) and that (8.13) holds for \( 1, \ldots, k - 1 \). Exactly as before, we decompose \( \Lambda \) along the spine up to \( \tau_{L}^{+} \), apply the triangular inequality and
arrive at

\[
\left( Q_x \left[ \Lambda^{k-1} \left\vert \mathcal{G}_\infty \right. \right] \right)^{1/(k-1)} \leq e^{\varrho - S_{\tau_L^+}} + \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_{\ell_L}^+} \sum_{u \in \partial_\ell} \left( Q_x \left[ (\Lambda^{(u)})^{k-1} \left\vert \mathcal{G}_\infty \right. \right] \right)^{1/(k-1)},
\]

where \( \Lambda^{(u)} := \sum_{v \in T^{(u)} \cap \mathcal{H}(L) \cap G(L, \lambda)} e^{\varrho - V(v)} \) with \( T^{(u)} \) the subtree rooted at \( u \). By Proposition 2, under \( Q_x \) and conditioning on \( \mathcal{G}_\infty \), each \( \Lambda^{(u)} \) is distributed as \( (\Lambda, P_{V(u)}) \). Hence by induction assumption,

\[
(\Lambda^{(u)})^{k-1} \left\vert \mathcal{G}_\infty \right. \leq c \frac{k^{k-1}}{k-1} e^{\varrho - S_{\tau_L^+} + L + \tau_L \sum_{\ell=1}^{u} (\Lambda^{(u)})^{k-1} \left\vert \mathcal{G}_\infty \right. \right)^{1/(k-1)},
\]

where \( \Lambda^{(u)} \cdot \sum_{v \in T^{(u)} \cap \mathcal{H}(L) \cap G(L, \lambda)} e^{\varrho - V(v)} \) with \( T^{(u)} \) the subtree rooted at \( u \).

By Proposition 2, under \( Q_x \) and conditioning on \( \mathcal{G}_\infty \), each \( \Lambda^{(u)} \) is distributed as \( (\Lambda, P_{V(u)}) \). Hence by induction assumption,

\[
(\Lambda^{(u)})^{k-1} \left\vert \mathcal{G}_\infty \right. \leq c \frac{k^{k-1}}{k-1} e^{\varrho - S_{\tau_L^+} + L + \tau_L \sum_{\ell=1}^{u} (\Lambda^{(u)})^{k-1} \left\vert \mathcal{G}_\infty \right. \right)^{1/(k-1)},
\]

Then

\[
(\Lambda^{(u)})^{k-1} \left\vert \mathcal{G}_\infty \right. \leq e^{\varrho - S_{\tau_L^+} + L + \tau_L \sum_{\ell=1}^{u} (\Lambda^{(u)})^{k-1} \left\vert \mathcal{G}_\infty \right. \right)^{1/(k-1)}.
\]

Notice that \( \frac{\varrho + \delta}{k-1} \geq \varrho_- \) and that on \( \{ w \tau_L^+ \in \mathcal{G}(L, \lambda) \} \),

\[
\sum_{u \in \partial_\ell} e^{\varrho_+/(k-1) + \Delta V(u)} \leq \max_{u \in \partial_\ell} e^{\varrho_+/(k-1) - \varrho_-} \Delta V(u)
\]

\[
\leq (a_\ell)^{1-s} \lambda^{\varrho_+/(\varrho_- - (k-1))} \Delta V(u) \leq (a_\ell)^{1-s} \lambda^{\varrho_+/(\varrho_- - (k-1))} (L - S_{\ell-1}),
\]

with \( s := \frac{k^{k-1}}{k-1} \frac{\varrho + \delta}{k-1} \). We mention that the above inequality holds for \( k = k^* \).

Going back to (8.14), we obtain that [we keep the density there and use the inequality \( (x+y)^k \leq 2^k (x^{k-1} + y^{k-1}) \)]

\[
E_x[\Lambda^k] \leq c(\lambda) e^{\varrho_- + (k-1) L}
\]

\[
\times e^{\varrho_+ - (k-1) L} \left( Q_x \left[ (k^\varrho_- + \varrho_+) T_{\ell_{L+1}}^+ \right] \right)^{k-1}) + Q_x \left[ \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_{\ell_L}^+} (a_\ell)^{1-s} e^{(1-s) \varrho_-(S_{\ell-1} - L)} \right]^{k-1}).
\]

Recall that \( Q_x [e^{(k \varrho_- + \varrho_+) T_{\ell_{L+1}}^+}] = Q[e^{(k \varrho_- + \varrho_+) T_{\ell_{L+1}}^+}] \) is bounded by some constant since we have \( Q[e^{(k \varrho_- + \varrho_+) S_{\ell_1}}] = \exp\{\psi(k \varrho_- + \delta)\} < \infty \) if \( \delta > 0 \) is sufficiently small [here we use the fact that \( k \leq k^* - 1 \)]. By Lemma 5, the above expectation \( Q_x [\cdots]^{k-1} \) is uniformly bounded, which proves (8.13).
To control $E_x[\Lambda^q]$, we use the change of measure

$$E_x[\Lambda^q] = e^{\theta^+ + (\theta^- - \theta^+)L}Q_x[e^{(\theta^- - \theta^+)T^+_L}1_{\{w_{-L} \in \mathcal{G}(L,\lambda)\}}\Lambda^{q-1}, \tau^+_L < \tau_0^-].$$

Since $q < k^*$, $(Q_x[\Lambda^{q-1}|\mathcal{G}_\infty])^{1/(q-1)} \leq (Q_x[\Lambda^{k^*-1}|\mathcal{G}_\infty])^{1/(k^*-1)}$. From (8.13) with $k = k^* - 1$ there, we use the same arguments as before and get that

$$E_x[\Lambda^q] \leq ce^{\theta^+ + (\theta^- - \theta^+)L}e^{\theta_-(q-1)L}\left( Q_x[e^{(\theta^- - \theta^+)T^+_L}] + Q_x\left[ \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau^+_L} (a_\ell)^{1-s} e^{(1-s)(\theta_-(S_{\ell-1} - L))} \right]^{q-1} \right).$$

Again, $Q_x[e^{(\theta^- - \theta^+)T^+_L}]$ is bounded by some constant since

$$Q[e^{(\theta^- - \theta^+ + \delta)S_1}] = \exp(\psi(\theta^- + \delta)) < \infty$$

if $\delta > 0$ is sufficiently small. By Lemma 5, the above expectation $Q_x[\cdots]^{q-1}$ is uniformly bounded, which proves (ii).

(iii) The proof follows in the same spirit as that of (i) and (ii): Let $\chi(L) := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} e^{\theta_-(V(u) - L)}$, and we prove by induction that for any $1 \leq k \leq k^*$,

$$E_x[\chi(L)^k] \leq c_k e^{\theta_+(x-L)}, \quad x \in \mathbb{R}. \quad (8.15)$$

The case $k = 1$ is obvious by the change of measure. Assume (8.15) for $k - 1$ and $2 \leq k \leq k^*$. By repeating the same arguments as in (ii), we get that

$$E_x[\chi(L)^k] \leq ce^{\theta_-(x-L)} \times \left( Q_x^{(\theta^-)}[e^{(k-1)\theta^- T^+_L}, \tau^+_L < \tau_0^-] + Q_x^{(\theta^-)}\left[ \left( \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau^+_L} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} e^{(\theta_+/(k-1))(V(u) - L)} \right)^{k-1}, \tau^+_L < \tau_0^- \right] \right). \quad (8.16)$$

By the absolute continuity between $Q_x^{(\theta^-)}$ and $Q_x$,

$$Q_x^{(\theta^-)}[e^{(k-1)\theta^- T^+_L}, \tau^+_L < \tau_0^-] = e^{(\theta_+ - \theta^-)(x-(k-1)\theta^- - L)}Q_x^{(\theta^- + \delta)S_1}[e^{(\theta^- - \theta^+ + \delta_4)S_1}, \tau^+_L < \tau_0^-] = e^{(\theta_+ - \theta^-)(x-L)}Q_x[e^{(\theta^- - \theta^+)T^+_L}, \tau^+_L < \tau_0^-] \leq ce^{(\theta_+ - \theta^-)(x-L)},$$

where the term $Q_x[e^{(\theta^- - \theta^+)T^+_L}]$ is uniformly bounded, since for $k \leq k^*$ and sufficiently small $\delta_4 > 0$, $Q[e^{(\theta^- - \theta^- + \delta_4)S_1}] = e^{\psi(\theta^- + \delta)} < \infty$ by (1.9).
It remains to control the second expectation term $Q_x^{(c_\cdot)}$ in (8.16). Let $b_\ell := \sum_{u \in H_\ell} e^{\varrho_+/(k-1)\Delta V(u)}$, for $\ell \geq 1$. Under $Q_x^{(c_\cdot)}$, $(S_\ell - S_{\ell - 1}, b_\ell)_{\ell \geq 1}$ are i.i.d. and

$$Q_x^{(c_\cdot)}[b_1^{k-1}] = E\left[ \left( \sum_{|u| = 1} e^{\varrho_+ V(u)} \right) \left( \sum_{v \neq u} e^{\varrho_+/(k-1)\Delta V(v)} \right)^{k-1} \right]$$

$$\leq E\left[ \sum_{|u| = 1} e^{\varrho_+ V(u)} \right]^{1+\varrho_+/\varrho_-},$$

where the last inequality follows from the elementary inequality: for any $n \geq 1$ and $x_1, \ldots, x_n \in \mathbb{R}$, $(\sum_{i=1}^n e^{\varrho_+ x_i/(k-1)})^{k-1} \leq \left( \sum_{i=1}^n e^{\varrho_+/(\varrho_-+\varrho_+ x_i)\varrho_-} \right)^{\varrho_+} = \left( \sum_{i=1}^n e^{x_i\varrho_-}e^{\varrho_-} \right)^{\varrho_-}$, since $k - 1 < \varrho_-\varrho_+$. Then $Q_x^{(c_\cdot)}[b_1^{k-1}] < \infty$ by (1.9). Going back to (8.16), we see that the expectation term $Q_x[\cdot]^{k-1}, \tau_L^+ < \tau_0^{-}$ equals

$$Q_x^{(c_\cdot)} \left[ \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_L^+} b_\ell e^{\varrho_+/(k-1)(S_\ell - S_{\ell - 1} - L)} \right]^{k-1}, \tau_L^+ < \tau_0^{-} \leq c' e^{(\varrho_+ - \varrho_-)(x-L)},$$

by applying (4.26) to $(S_\ell - S_{\ell - 1}, b_\ell)_{\ell \geq 1}$ with $\gamma = \varrho_+ - \varrho_-, b = \varrho_+/(k-1)$ and $p = k-1$. This proves (8.15) hence (iii). □

The next lemma controls the number of bad particles.

**Lemma 20.** Let $r = \frac{\varrho_+}{\varrho_-} - 1 + \frac{\delta^*}{2}$ [with $\delta^*$ as in (1.4)].

(i) There exists some constant $c = c(r) > 0$ such that for all $0 \leq x \leq L$,

$$E_x[Z_b[0, L]] \leq c\lambda^{-r} e^{\varrho_+ x} e^{(\varrho_+ - \varrho_-) L}.$$

(ii) Denote by $\mathcal{L}_{b,L}[0] := \{v \in \mathcal{L}[0] : \exists u \in \mathcal{H}(L) \cap \mathbb{B}(L, \lambda) \text{ with } u < v \}$ the set of leaves which are descendants of some element of $\mathcal{H}(L) \cap \mathbb{B}(L, \lambda)$. Then for any $0 \leq x \leq L$,

$$E_x[\#\mathcal{L}_{b,L}[0]] \leq c\lambda^{-r} e^{\varrho_+ x} e^{(\varrho_+ - \varrho_-) L}.$$

**Proof.** (i) By changing the measure from $P_x$ to $Q_x^{(c\cdot)}$,

$$E_x[Z_b[0, L]] = e^{\varrho_- x} Q_x^{(c\cdot)}[e^{\varrho_- S_{\tau_0^-}} 1_{\{w_{\tau_0^-} \in \mathbb{B}(L, \lambda)\}}, \tau_0^- < \tau_L^+].$$

Let us write $a_j := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_j} (1 + e^{\Delta V(u)})$, $j \geq 1$, in this proof. Then

$$1_{\{w_{\tau_0^-} \in \mathbb{B}(L, \lambda)\}} \leq \sum_{j=1}^{\tau_0^-} \lambda^{-r} a_j e^{-\varrho_- (L - S_{\tau_0^-})},$$

(8.17)
which yields that
\[
E_x[Z_b(0, L)] \leq \lambda^{-r} e^{q_x} \sum_{j=1}^{\tau_0} \alpha_j e^{-r(S_j - 1)} e^{-(L-S_j - 1)} \tau_0 < \tau_L^+
\]
by applying (4.26) to \( q = q_+ - q_- \), \( p = 1 \) and \( b = r q_+ > q_- \) [the integrability hypothesis is satisfied thanks to (1.4) and the choice of \( r \) : \( Q^{(q_-)}[(1 + 1_{|S_1|<0})e^{q_-(S_1)}] \leq E[|u|_{1=1}(1 + e^{V(u)})]^{r+1} < \infty \), and \( Q^{(q_-)}[e^{r(S_j - 1)}] = e^{\psi(\phi(1+r))} < \infty \). This proves (i).

(ii) Remark that \( \#L_{b,L}[0] = \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L) \cap B(L,\lambda)} \#L^{(u)}[0] \), where \( L^{(u)}[0] \) denotes the set of leaves which are descendants of \( u \). By the branching property, conditioned on \( \mathcal{H}(L) \cap B(L,\lambda) \), \( (\#L^{(u)}[0])_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L) \cap B(L,\lambda)} \) are independent and are distributed as \( \#L[0] \) under \( P_{V(u)} \). It follows from Lemma 18 (with \( k = 1 \) that
\[
E_x(\#L_{b,L}[0]) \leq cE_x \left[ \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L) \cap B(L,\lambda)} e^{rV(u)} \right]
= ce^{q_x} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L) \cap B(L,\lambda)} \#L^{(u)}[0] \tau_L^+ < \tau_0^-
\]
by the change of measure from \( P_x \) to \( Q^{(q_-)}_x \). By (8.17) (with \( \tau_L^+ \) instead of \( \tau_0^- \), the above probability under \( Q^{(q_-)}_x \) is less than
\[
\lambda^{-r} Q_x^{(q_-)} \left[ \sum_{j=1}^{\tau_L^+} a_j e^{-r(S_j - 1)} \tau_L^+ < \tau_0^- \right]
\leq \lambda^{-r} \sum_{j \geq 1} Q_x^{(q_-)} \left[ e^{-r(S_j - 1)} \tau_L < \tau_0^- \right] Q_x^{(q_-)}[a_j],
\]
since for each \( j \), \( a_j \) is independent of \( (S_j, j \leq \min(\tau_L^+, \tau_0^-)) \); moreover \( Q_x^{(q_-)}[a_j] = Q_x^{(q_-)}(a_{j}) = c' < \infty \) as in (i). Then we have
\[
E_x[Z_b(0, L)] \leq cc' e^{q_x} \lambda^{-r} \sum_{j \geq 1} Q_x^{(q_-)} \left[ e^{-r(S_j - 1)} \tau_L < \tau_0^- \right],
\]
which by an application of (4.23) (with \( r q_+ > q_- := q_+ - q_- \)) gives (ii). \( \square \)

Let \( M^{(q_-)}_\infty \) be the almost sure limit of \( M^{(q_-)}_n := \sum_{|u|=n} e^{V(u)} \). By [8, 26], \( M^{(q_-)}_\infty \) is almost surely positive on the event \( \{ T = \infty \} \). From [24], we know that there exists a constant \( c_{q_-} \) such that
\[
P(M^{(q_-)}_\infty > t) \sim c_{q_-} t^{-e_-/e_-}, \quad t \to \infty.
\]
(8.18)
We mention that the constant $c_{\varrho_-}$ is given in [20], Theorem 4.10:

$$c_{\varrho_-} = \frac{1}{\varrho_+\psi'(\varrho_+)} \mathbb{E}\left[ \left( \sum_{|u|=1} e^{\varrho_- V(u)} M_\infty^{(\varrho_-u)} \right)^{\varrho_+ / \varrho_-} - \sum_{|u|=1} e^{\varrho_+ V(u)} (M_\infty^{(\varrho_-u)})^{\varrho_+ / \varrho_-} \right],$$

where under $P$ and conditioned on $\{V(u), |u|=1\}$, $(M_\infty^{(\varrho_-u)})_{|u|=1}$ are i.i.d. copies of $M_\infty^{(\varrho_-)}$.

**Lemma 21** (Subcritical case). As $t \to \infty$, the law of $\#L[0]$ under $P_t$, the number of descendants absorbed at 0 of a particle starting from $t$, normalized by $e^{\varrho_- t}$ converges in distribution to $c^*_{\text{sub}} M_\infty^{(\varrho_-)}$ where

$$c^*_{\text{sub}} = \frac{Q^{(\varrho_-)}[e^{-\varrho_- S_{t_0}}] - 1}{\varrho_- Q^{(\varrho_-)}[-S_{t_0}]}.$$

**Proof.** The proof is similar to that of Lemma 15; we only point out the main difference and omit the details. Recall that $L[a] := \{u \in T : |u| = \tau_a^*(u)\}$. By linear translation, it is enough to prove that $e^{\varrho_- t} \#L[-t]$ converges in law to $c^*_{\text{sub}} M_\infty^{(\varrho_-)}$. Let $M_{L[-t]}^{(\varrho_-)} := \sum_{u \in L[-t]} e^{\varrho_- V(u)}$, which converges almost surely to $M_\infty^{(\varrho_-)}$. On the other hand, we have $M_{L[-t]}^{(\varrho_-)} = e^{\varrho_- t} \sum_{u \in L[-t]} e^{\varrho_-(V(u)+t)}$. Similarly to the proof of Lemma 15, we apply Theorem 6.3 in Nerman [29] (with $\alpha = \varrho_-$ there) and obtain that on $\{T = \infty\}$, almost surely

$$\frac{\sum_{u \in L[-t]} e^{\varrho_-(V(u)+t)}}{\#L[-t]} \to \varrho_- \frac{Q^{(\varrho_-)}[-S_{t_0}]}{Q^{(\varrho_-)}[e^{-\varrho_- S_{t_0}}] - 1}, \quad t \to \infty,$$

which easily yields the lemma. □

**Lemma 22.** For any $\lambda > 0$, let $\tilde{\mu}_{\lambda,\infty} := \sum_{i=1}^{\tilde{\xi}_{\lambda}} \delta_{(x_i)}$ be the point process defined in Proposition 1 associated with $B(\theta) := (\frac{1}{\lambda} \int \theta(x) (1 + e^{-\lambda x}))^{1/\varrho_-}$ for $\theta \in \Omega_f$. Let $(M_\infty^{(\varrho_-i)}, i \geq 1)$ be a sequence of i.i.d. random variables of common law that of $(M_\infty^{(\varrho_-)}, P)$, independent of $\tilde{\mu}_{\lambda,\infty}$. As $t \to \infty$, we have

$$Q\left( \sum_{i=1}^{\tilde{\xi}_{\lambda}} e^{\varrho_- x_i} M_\infty^{(\varrho_-i)} > t \right) \sim c_{\varrho_-} Q\left[ \int \tilde{\mu}_{\lambda,\infty}(dx) e^{\varrho_+ x} \right] t^{-\varrho_+ / \varrho_-}.$$

We mention that as $\lambda \to \infty$, $Q[\int \tilde{\mu}_{\lambda,\infty}(dx) e^{\varrho_+ x}] \to \frac{1}{Q[\varrho_+ - 1]}$ by (6.24) and (6.27).

**Proof.** Let $\Lambda_{L,\lambda} := \sum_{u \in H(L) \cap \Omega(L,\lambda)} e^{\varrho_- (V(u)-L)}$. By Proposition 1, under $P_\lambda(\cdot | H(L) > 0)$, $\Lambda_{L,\lambda}$ converges in law to $\int \tilde{\mu}_{\lambda,\infty}(dx) e^{\varrho_- x} = \sum_{i=1}^{\tilde{\xi}_{\lambda}} e^{\varrho_- x_i}$ (some
tightness is required here but we omit the details since the arguments are similar to the critical case). By Lemma 19(ii), the family \((\Lambda_{L,\lambda}, P_x(\cdot|H(L) > 0))\) is bounded in \(L^q\) with \(q = \frac{p_+}{p_-} + \delta_2\), hence

\[
Q \left[ \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\xi}_L} e^{\varrho - x_i} \right]^q < \infty. \tag{8.19}
\]

This together with (8.18) allows us to apply Lemma 16 to \(p = \frac{\varrho_+}{\varrho_-}\) and yields the desired asymptotic result. \(\square\)

We now prove Theorem 2 in the subcritical case.

**Proof of Theorem 2 (ii).**

**Lower bound of Theorem 2 (ii):** The proof of the lower bound goes in the same way as that of Theorem 2(i) by using Proposition 1 and Lemma 21. Let \(A > 0\). Consider \(n \to \infty\), let \(L_A := \frac{1}{\varrho_-} \log n - A\) and \(\lambda := e^{\varrho - A}\). We keep the same notation \(H_g(L_A), (\#L^{(i)}[0], 1 \leq i \leq H_g(L_A))\): Recall (7.1) and \(H_g(L_A) := \# \mathcal{H}_g(L_A)\) with \(\mathcal{H}_g(L_A) := \mathcal{H}(L_A) \cap \mathcal{G}(L_n, e^{\varrho - A})\).

We define as well \(B^{(i)} := \#L^{(i)}[0] e^{-\varrho - V(u^{(i)})}\) for \(u^{(i)} \in \mathcal{H}(L_A)\), and \(E(L_A)\) the event that \(B^{(i)} > (1 - \varepsilon)M^{(\varrho - i)}_\infty\), \(\forall i\) with small \(\varepsilon > 0\). Repeating the proof of the lower bound of Theorem 2(i), and using Proposition 1 and Lemma 21, we get that for any \(A > 0\),

\[
\liminf_{n \to \infty} n^{\varrho_+ / \varrho_-} P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_g(L_A)} \#L^{(i)}[0] > n \right) \geq \frac{Q[\mathfrak{N}^{-1}]}{C_R} R(x) e^{\varrho_+ + A} e^{\varrho - A} Q \left( \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\xi}_L} e^{\varrho - x_i} M^{(\varrho - i)}_\infty > \frac{1}{\epsilon^*_{sub}} e^{\varrho - A} \right) = \frac{Q[\mathfrak{N}^{-1}]}{C_R} R(x) e^{\varrho_+ + A} C_s(A), \tag{8.21}
\]

where \(\hat{\mu}_{\lambda, \infty} := \sum_{i=1}^{\hat{\xi}_L} \delta_{\{x_i\}}\) is the point process as in Lemma 22 (with \(\lambda := e^{\varrho - A}\) there) and \(\epsilon^*_{sub}\) is defined in Lemma 21. The same also holds for the upper bound, hence for any \(A > 0\),

\[
\lim_{n \to \infty} n^{\varrho_+ / \varrho_-} P_x \left( \sum_{i=1}^{H_g(L_A)} \#L^{(i)}[0] > n \right) = \frac{Q[\mathfrak{N}^{-1}]}{C_R} R(x) e^{\varrho_+ + A} C_s(A). \tag{8.22}
\]
Since $\mathbb{P}_x(\#L[0] > n) \geq \mathbb{P}_x(\sum_{i=1}^{H(L_A)} \#L(i)[0] > n)$, we get that for any $A > 0$,
\begin{equation}
\liminf_{n \to \infty} n^{\theta_+ - \theta_-} \mathbb{P}_x(\#L[0] > n) \geq \frac{Q[\beta^{-1}]}{C_R} R(x)e^{\theta_+} C_s(A).
\end{equation}

Upper bound of Theorem 2(ii): By Lemma 20 and Lemma 19(i) with $L := L_A = \frac{1}{\theta_-} \log n - A, \lambda := e^{\theta_- - A}$ and $k^* := \lceil \frac{\theta_+}{\theta_-} \rceil + 1$, we obtain the following estimate: For any $\epsilon > 0$,
\[ \mathbb{P}_x(Z_g[0, L_A] \geq \epsilon n) \leq (\epsilon n)^{-k^*} e^{A(\theta_- - \theta_+ - \delta_2 \theta_2)} e^{\theta_+} + (\theta_- - \theta_+ - \delta_2 \theta_2) L_A \]
and
\[ \mathbb{P}_x(Z_b[0, L_A] \geq \epsilon n) \leq \frac{1}{\epsilon n} e^{A(\theta_- - \theta_+ - \delta_2 \theta_2) / 2} e^{\theta_+} + (\theta_- - \theta_+) L_A \]
with the same estimate for $\mathbb{P}_x(L_{b, L_A}[0] \geq \epsilon n)$. Since $Z[0, L_A] = Z_g[0, L_A] + Z_b[0, L_A]$, we obtain that for any $\epsilon > 0$,
\[ \limsup_{A \to \infty} \limsup_{n \to \infty} n^{\theta_+ - \theta_-} \mathbb{P}_x(Z[0, L_A] + L_{b, L_A}[0] \geq 3 \epsilon n) = 0. \]

From here and using the fact that $\#L[0] = Z[0, L_A] + L_{b, L_A}[0] + \sum_{i=1}^{H_x(L_A)} \#L(i)[0]$, we deduce from (8.22) that for any $A > 0$,
\[ \limsup_{n \to \infty} n^{\theta_+ - \theta_-} \mathbb{P}_x(\#L[0] > n) \leq \frac{Q[\beta^{-1}]}{C_R} R(x)e^{\theta_+} C_s(A) + o_A(1), \]
with $o_A(1) \to 0$ as $A \to \infty$ (in fact exponentially fast). This together with the lower bound (8.23) yields that $\lim_{n \to \infty} n^{\theta_+ - \theta_-} \mathbb{P}_x(\#L[0] > n)$ exists and is finite. Then, a fortiori, $\lim_{A \to \infty} C_s(A)$ also exists and is some finite constant. This proves Theorem 2(ii). \( \square \)

We end this section by giving the proof of Lemma 1.

**Proof of Lemma 1.** By (5.21), $C_R = 1/Q(\tau_0^- = \infty)$. Recall (8.21). It suffices to show that
\begin{equation}
\lim_{A \to \infty} C_s(A) = \frac{c_{\theta_+}}{Q[\beta^{-1}]} (c_{\text{sub}}^*)^{\theta_+ - \theta_-}.
\end{equation}

The lower bound follows from the monotonicity: the random point measure $\hat{\mu}_{\lambda, \infty}$ is stochastically increasing in $\lambda$; Then for any $A > A_0$, $\lambda = e^{\theta_- - A} > \lambda_0 := e^{\theta_- - A_0}$, $\hat{\mu}_{\lambda, \infty}$ stochastically dominates $\hat{\mu}_{\lambda_0, \infty} := \sum_{i=1}^{\xi_{\lambda_0}} \delta_{[x_i]}$, hence
\[ C_s(A) \geq e^{\theta_- - A} Q\left( \sum_{i=1}^{\xi_{\lambda_0}} e^{\theta_- - x_i} M^{(\theta_- - i)} \left( \frac{1}{c_{\text{sub}}^*} e^{\theta_- - A} \right) \right). \]
Applying Lemma 22 to \( \lambda_0 \) yields that for any \( \lambda_0 := e^{\rho - A_0} \),
\[ \lim_{A \to \infty} C_s(A) \geq c_{\rho^-} \mathbb{Q} \left[ \int \tilde{\mu}_{\lambda_0, \infty}(dx) e^{\rho - x} \right] (c_{\text{sub}}^*)^{\rho^+ / \rho^-} . \]
Letting \( \lambda_0 \to \infty \), the above expectation term converges to \( 1 / \mathbb{Q} [\mathbb{N}^{-1}] \) and proves the lower bound.

To derive the upper bound, by Lemma 19(iii) and Theorem 3(ii), we get that under \( \mathbb{P}(\cdot | \mathcal{H}(L) > 0) \), \( \sum_{u \in \mathcal{H}(L)} e^{\rho - (V(u) - L)} \) is bounded in \( L^{k^*} \) and converges in law to \( \sum_{i=1}^{\tilde{\xi}_{\infty}} e^{\rho - x_i} \), where \( \tilde{\mu}_{\infty} = \sum_{i=1}^{\tilde{\xi}_{\infty}} \delta_{x_i} \). Therefore
\[ \mathbb{Q} \left[ \sum_{i=1}^{\tilde{\xi}_{\infty}} e^{\rho - x_i} \right]^{k^*} < \infty, \]
which in view of Lemma 16 and (8.18) yields, as \( A \to \infty \),
\[ e^{\rho^+ A} \mathbb{Q} \left( \sum_{i=1}^{\tilde{\xi}_{\infty}} e^{\rho - x_i} M_i^{\rho^-} \right) > \frac{1}{c_{\text{sub}}^*} e^{\rho - A} \to \frac{c_{\rho^-}}{\mathbb{Q} [\mathbb{N}^{-1}] (c_{\text{sub}}^*)^{\rho^+ / \rho^-}} . \]
Since \( \tilde{\mu}_{\infty} \) stochastically dominates \( \tilde{\mu}_{A, \infty} \), this gives the desired upper bound for \( C_s(A) \) and completes the proof of the lemma. □

9. Proofs of the technical lemmas.

9.1. Proof of Lemma 4. Obviously we may assume that \( \| F \|_{\infty} \leq 1 \) throughout the proof of (i) and (ii).

Proof of part (i). Since \( \mathbb{P}(\tau_t^+ > K) \to 1 \) as \( t \to \infty \), it is enough to show that
\[
\lim_{t \to \infty} \mathbb{E} \left[ 1_{\{\tau_t^+ > K\}} F(T_t^+, (S_{\tau_t^+} - S_{\tau_t^+ - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K}) \right] 
= \mathbb{E} \left[ F(U \hat{S}_\sigma, (\hat{S}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K}) \right].
\] (9.1)

Recall that \( (\sigma_n, H_n)_{n \geq 1} \) are the strict ascending ladder epochs and ladder heights of \( S \). Since for some (unique) \( n \geq 1, \tau_t^+ = \sigma_n \) and \( T_t^+ = H_n - t \), we can write
\[
B_t := \mathbb{E} \left[ 1_{\{\tau_t^+ > K\}} F(T_t^+, (S_{\tau_t^+} - S_{\tau_t^+ - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K}) \right] 
= \sum_{n \geq 1} \mathbb{E} \left[ 1_{\{H_n - 1 \leq t < H_n\}} 1_{\{K < \sigma_n\}} F(H_n - t, (S_{\sigma_n} - S_{\sigma_n - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K}) \right].
\]
Let us choose some integer \( m > K \). Notice that \( \sigma_n - \sigma_{n-m} > K \) and \( \sigma_n > K \) for \( n \geq m \). Since the previous sum for \( n < m \) is smaller than \( \mathbb{P}(H_m > t) \) which tends to 0 when \( t \) tends to infinity, we get
\[
B_t = \sum_{n \geq m} \mathbb{E} \left[ 1_{\{H_n - 1 \leq t < H_n\}} F(H_n - t, (S_{\sigma_n} - S_{\sigma_n - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K}) \right] + o_t(1)
= : B'_t + o_t(1),
\]
with $|o(t)| \leq P(H_m > t) \to 0$ as $t \to \infty$. Applying the strong Markov property at the stopping time $\sigma_{n-m}$, we obtain that

$$B'_t = \sum_{n \geq m} E[1_{\{H_{n-m} \leq t\}} E_{H_{n-m}}[1_{\{H_{m-1} \leq t < H_m\}} F(H_m - t, (S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m-j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})]]$$

$$= \sum_{n \geq m} E[1_{\{H_{n-m} \leq t\}} g(t - H_{n-m})],$$

with

$$g(x) := E[1_{\{H_{m-1} \leq x < H_m\}} F(H_m - x, (S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m-j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})] \quad \forall x \geq 0.$$

Therefore

$$B'_t = \int_0^t g(t - x) \, du(x),$$

(9.2)

with $u(x) = \sum_{n \geq 0} P(H_n \leq x)$. Let us check that $g$ is directly Riemann integrable on $\mathbb{R}_+$. Recall that a function $g$ is directly Riemann integrable (see Feller [13], page 362) if $g$ is continuous almost everywhere and satisfies

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sup_{0 \leq x \leq n+1} |g(x)| < \infty.$$  

(9.3)

Observe first that $\|F\|_\infty \leq 1$ implies $\|g\|_\infty \leq 1$. Now recall that $H_1$ is integrable. Therefore,

$$\sum_{n \geq 0} \sup_{n \leq x \leq n+1} |g(x)| \leq \sum_{n \geq 0} P(H_m \geq n) = 1 + E[H_m] = 1 + m E[H_1] < \infty,$$

yielding (9.3). Now we prove that $g$ is a.e. continuous. For $z \in \mathbb{R}_+^K$, denote by $D(z) \subset \mathbb{R}_+^*$ the set on which $F(\cdot, z)$ is discontinuous. By assumption, $D(z)$ is at most countable for any real $z$, hence $D((S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m-j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})$ is a random set (maybe empty) at most countable; the same is true for the random set

$$\Upsilon := \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} \{H_n - z: z \in D((S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m-j})_{1 \leq j \leq K}) \cup \{0\}\}.$$

In other words, we may represent $\Upsilon$ by a sequence of random variables taking values in $\mathbb{R}$. It follows that

$$\mathcal{D} := \{y: P(y \in \Upsilon) > 0\} \quad \text{is at most countable.}$$

We claim that for any $x \in \mathbb{R}_+^\ast \setminus \mathcal{D}$, $g$ is continuous at $x$. In fact, for any sequence $(x_n)_n$ such that $x_n \to x$ as $n \to \infty$, let $\xi_n := 1_{\{H_{m-1} \leq x_n < H_m\}} F(H_m - x_n, (S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m-j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})$ and $\xi := 1_{\{H_{m-1} \leq x < H_m\}} F(H_m - x, (S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m-j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})$, we shall show that as $n \to \infty$,

$$\xi_n \to \xi \quad \text{a.s.,}$$

(9.4)
which in view of the dominated convergence theorem, implies that $g(x_n) \to g(x)$ and the desired continuity of $g$ at $x$. To prove (9.4), first we remark that

$$\limsup_{n \to \infty} |1_{\{H_{m-1} \leq x_n < H_m\}} - 1_{\{H_{m-1} \leq x < H_m\}}| \leq 1_{\{H_{m-1} = x\}} + 1_{\{H_m = x\}}$$

(9.5)

$$= 0 \quad \text{a.s.,}$$

since $x \notin \mathcal{D}$ [hence a fortiori $\mathbb{P}(H_n = x) = 0$ for all $n \geq 1$]. Second,

$$\mathbb{P}(H_m - x \in D((S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})) \leq \mathbb{P}(x \in \mathcal{Y}) = 0,$$

since $x \notin \mathcal{D}$. In words, almost surely, $H_m - x \notin D((S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})$, which implies that $F(\cdot, (S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})$ is continuous at $H_m - x$; hence $F(H_m - x, (S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})$ a.s. when $n \to \infty$. This and (9.5) yield (9.4) and the continuity of $g$ on $\mathbb{R}_+ \setminus \mathcal{D}$. Then $g$ is directly Riemann integrable.

Going back to (9.2), we apply the renewal theorem (see Feller [13], page 363) and obtain that

$$\lim_{t \to \infty} B_t' = \frac{1}{\mathbb{E}[H_1]} \int_0^\infty g(x) \, dx,$$

which implies

$$\lim_{t \to \infty} B_t = \frac{1}{\mathbb{E}[H_1]} \left[ \int_0^{H_m - H_{m-1}} F(H_m - H_{m-1} - x, (S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K}) \, dx \right]$$

$$= \frac{1}{\mathbb{E}[H_1]} \mathbb{E}[(H_m - H_{m-1}) F(U(H_m - H_{m-1}), (S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})],$$

by using the independent uniform variable $U$.

Finally since the random segments $\{(S_{\sigma_k + j} - S_{\sigma_k})_{0 \leq j \leq \sigma_{k+1} - \sigma_k}; 0 \leq k < m\}$ are i.i.d., Tanaka’s construction [see (4.5)] implies that under $\mathbb{P}$ the segment of the random walk $(S_n)_{n \geq 0}$ up to time $\sigma_m$ viewed from $(\sigma_m, S_{\sigma_m})$ in reversed time and reflected in the $x$-axis, that is, $(S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m - j})_{0 \leq j \leq K}$, has the same law as $(\zeta_j)_{0 \leq j \leq K}$. Moreover since with this “partial” construction $H_m - H_{m-1}$ corresponds to the value of the reversed and reflected process at time $\tilde{\sigma} = \sup\{n \geq 1 : \zeta_n = \min_{1 \leq i \leq n} \zeta_i\}$, we obtain that

$$\frac{1}{\mathbb{E}[H_1]} \mathbb{E}[(H_m - H_{m-1}) F(U(H_m - H_{m-1}), (S_{\sigma_m} - S_{\sigma_m - j})_{1 \leq j \leq K})]$$

$$= \frac{1}{\mathbb{E}[H_1]} \mathbb{E}[(\zeta_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K}] = \mathbb{E}[F(U \hat{\sigma}, (\hat{\sigma}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})],$$

by using (4.6). This proves (9.1) and part (i) of the lemma.

**Proof of part (ii).** Write for notational convenience $\tilde{S}_j^{(i)} := S_{\tau^+_i + j}$ when $1 \leq j \leq \tau^+_i$. Note that part (i) of the lemma implies

$$\lim_{L \to \infty} \mathbb{E}[(1_{\{K < \tau^+_L\}} F(T_L^+, (\tilde{S}_j^{(L)})_{1 \leq j \leq K})) = \mathbb{E}[F(U \hat{\sigma}, (\hat{\sigma}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})] =: C_F.$$
Using the absolute continuity between $\mathbb{P}^+$ and $\mathbb{P}$ up to the stopping time $\tau_t^+$ [the martingale $(R(S_j))_{1 \leq j \leq \tau^+_t}$, $j \leq \tau^+_t$] is uniformly integrable thanks to Lemma 3(ii) and (iv), we can write

$$
\mathbb{E}^+[1_{\{K < \tau^+_t\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}^{(t)}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})] = \mathbb{E}[R(S_{\tau^+_t}) 1_{\{K < \tau^+_t < \tau^{-}_0\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}^{(t)}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})].
$$

We treat first the case $\mathbb{E}^+[S_1] = 0$. Combining parts (iii) and (iv) of Lemma 3, we deduce from the above equality that as $t \to \infty$,

$$
\mathbb{E}^+[1_{\{K < \tau^+_t\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}^{(t)}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})] \sim C_R t \mathbb{E}[1_{\{K < \tau^+_t < \tau^{-}_0\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}^{(t)}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})]
=:A_t.
$$

Let us now introduce $\ell_t := t - 2t^\gamma$ with $(1 + \delta/2)^{-1} < \gamma < 1$ and observe that $\tau_t^+ < \tau_0^-$ on the event $\{\tau_t^+ < \tau_0^-\}$. Recalling that part (ii) of Lemma 3 says that $(T_t^+, t \geq 0)$ is bounded in $L^p$ for all $1 < p < 1 + \delta$, we get $\mathbb{P}(T_{\ell_t^+} > t^\gamma) \leq c t^{-\gamma p} = o(t^{-1})$ by choosing $p$ such that $\gamma p > 1$. Therefore we obtain

$$
A_t = C_R t \mathbb{E}[1_{\{K < \tau^+_t < \tau^{-}_0\}} 1_{\{S_{\tau^+_t} \leq \ell_t - t^\gamma\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}^{(t)}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})] + o_t(1)
$$

$$= A'_t + A''_t + o_t(1),
$$

where $o_t(1) \to 0$ as $t \to \infty$ and

$$A'_t := C_R t \mathbb{E}[1_{\{K < \tau^+_t < \tau^{-}_0\}} 1_{\{S_{\tau^+_t} \leq \ell_t - t^\gamma\}} 1_{\{\tau^+_t - \tau_t^+ > K\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}^{(t)}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})],$$

$$A''_t := C_R t \mathbb{E}[1_{\{K < \tau^+_t < \tau^{-}_0\}} 1_{\{S_{\tau^+_t} \leq \ell_t - t^\gamma\}} 1_{\{\tau^+_t - \tau_t^+ \leq K\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}^{(t)}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})].$$

Applying the strong Markov property at the stopping time $\tau^+_{\ell_t}$ yields

$$A'_t = C_R t \mathbb{E}[1_{\{K < \tau^+_t < \tau^{-}_0\}} 1_{\{S_{\tau^+_t} \leq \ell_t - t^\gamma\}} f(S_{\tau^+_t})],$$

where

$$f(x) := \mathbb{E}x[1_{\{K < \tau^+_t < \tau^{-}_0\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}^{(t)}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})].$$

Then, writing

$$\mathbb{E}x[1_{\{K < \tau^+_t\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}^{(t)}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})] = \mathbb{E}[1_{\{K < \tau^+_t\}} F(T_L^+, (\tilde{S}^{(L)}_j)_{1 \leq j \leq K})],$$

with $L = t - x$, equation (9.6) yields

$$\max_{x \in [\ell_t; t^\gamma]} \left| \mathbb{E}x[1_{\{K < \tau^+_t\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}^{(t)}_j)_{0 \leq j \leq K})] - C_F \right| \to 0, \quad t \to \infty,$$

from which we deduce

$$\max_{x \in [\ell_t; t^\gamma]} \left| f(x) - C_F \right| \to 0, \quad t \to \infty,$$
since uniformly in \( x \geq \ell_t \), \( \mathbb{P}_x(\tau_0^- < \tau_t^+) = \mathbb{P}(\tau_{-x}^- < \tau_{-x}^+) \leq \mathbb{P}(\tau^-_{-\ell_t} < \tau^+_{-\ell_t}) = o_t(1) \). Furthermore, observing that \( \mathbb{P}(\tau_t^+ < \tau_0^-) \sim \frac{1}{C_Rt} \) [see part (v) of Lemma 3 and recall that \( \ell_t = t - 2t^\gamma \) with \( \gamma < 1 \)] and \( \mathbb{P}(t - S_{\ell_t^+} \leq t^\gamma) = \mathbb{P}(T_{\ell_t^+} > t^\gamma) = o(t^{-1}) \) imply \( \mathbb{P}(\tau_t^+ < \tau_0^- : S_{\ell_t^+} \leq t - t^\gamma) \sim 1/C_Rt \), and when \( t \) tends to infinity, we obtain

\[
A_t' \longrightarrow C_F, \quad t \to \infty.
\]

Similarly, the strong Markov property applied at the stopping time \( \tau_{\ell_t}^+ \) implies

\[
A_t'' \leq C_Rt \mathbb{E}[\mathbb{1}_{\{\tau_{\ell_t}^+ < \tau_0^-\}} \mathbb{1}_{\{S_{\ell_t^+} \leq t - t^\gamma\}} \mathbb{P}(S_{\ell_t^+} (\tau_{\ell_t}^+ \leq K))].
\]

Moreover, observe that

\[
\sup_{x \leq t - t^\gamma} \mathbb{P}_x(\tau_t^+ \leq K) \leq \mathbb{P}_t(t^\gamma) (\tau_t^+ \leq K) = \mathbb{P}(\tau_{t^\gamma}^+ \leq K) = o_t(1),
\]

which implies

\[
\sup_{x \leq t - t^\gamma} \mathbb{P}_x(\tau_t^+ \leq K) \leq \mathbb{P}_t(t^\gamma) (\tau_t^+ \leq K) = \mathbb{P}(\tau_{t^\gamma}^+ \leq K) = o_t(1),
\]

by recalling that \( \mathbb{P}(\tau_t^+ < \tau_0^- ; S_{\ell_t^+} \leq t - t^\gamma) \sim \frac{1}{C_Rt} \). Combining (9.9), (9.11) and recalling (9.7), we obtain \( A_t \to C_F \), when \( t \to \infty \), which concludes the proof of part (ii) in the case \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] = 0 \).

The case \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] > 0 \) is similar but easier. Indeed, combining parts (iii) and (iv) of Lemma 3 implies

\[
\mathbb{E}^+\left[\mathbb{1}_{\{K < \tau_{t^\gamma}^+\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}_j^{(t)})_{1 \leq j \leq K})\right] \sim C_R \mathbb{E}[\mathbb{1}_{\{K < \tau_{t^\gamma}^+ < \tau_0^-\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}_j^{(t)})_{1 \leq j \leq K})]
\]

\[
\bar{\Lambda}_t,
\]

Recalling that \( \ell_t = t - 2t^\gamma \) and that part (ii) of Lemma 3 implies \( \mathbb{P}(T_t^+ > t^\gamma) = o_t(1) \), and we get

\[
\bar{\Lambda}_t = C_R \mathbb{E}[\mathbb{1}_{\{K < \tau_{t^\gamma}^+ < \tau_0^-\}} \mathbb{1}_{\{S_{\ell_t^+} \leq t - t^\gamma\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}_j^{(t)})_{1 \leq j \leq K})] + o_t(1)
\]

\[
= C_R \mathbb{E}[\mathbb{1}_{\{\tau_{t^\gamma}^+ < \tau_0^-\}} \mathbb{1}_{\{S_{\ell_t^+} \leq t - t^\gamma\}} 1_{\{\tau_{t^\gamma}^+ - \tau_0^- > K\}} F(T_t^+, (\tilde{S}_j^{(t)})_{1 \leq j \leq K})] + o_t(1),
\]

the last equality being a consequence of (9.10), which still holds in the case \( \mathbb{E}[S_1] > 0 \). Then, the strong Markov property yields

\[
\bar{\Lambda}_t = C_R \mathbb{E}[\mathbb{1}_{\{\tau_{t^\gamma}^+ < \tau_0^-\}} \mathbb{1}_{\{S_{\ell_t^+} \leq t - t^\gamma\}} f(S_{\ell_t^+})] + o_t(1),
\]

where we recall that the function \( f \) is defined by (9.7). Now the strategy is exactly the same as for the previous case. Indeed, since \( \mathbb{P}_x(\tau_0^- < \tau_t^+) = o_t(1) \) (uniformly in \( x \geq \ell_t \)) is still true, (9.6) implies \( \max_{x \in [\ell_t; t - t^\gamma]} |f(x) - C_F| \to 0 \), when \( t \) tends...
to $\infty$. Combining this with part (v) of Lemma 3 [which implies $\mathbb{P}(\tau_{t_i}^+ < \tau_0^-; S_{\tau_{t_i}^+} \leq t - t^\gamma) \to 1/C_R$] yields $\tilde{A}_t \to C_F$, when $t \to \infty$. This completes the proof of part (ii) of the lemma and completes the proof of Lemma 4.

**Proof of Lemma 5.** We may assume that $p$ equals some integer, say, $m \geq 1$.

Indeed, for any $m - 1 < p \leq m$, by the concavity,

$$
\mathbb{E}_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau_{t_i}^+ - 1} a_{k+1} e^{\kappa(S_k - t)} \right]^p \leq \mathbb{E}_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau_{t_i}^+ - 1} (a_{k+1})^p/m e^{\kappa p(S_k - t)/m} \right]^m.
$$

Applying (4.7) to $((a_{k+1})^p/m, S_k - S_{k-1})$ with integer $m$ yields the general case $p$.

Now, we consider $p = m$ is some integer and prove (4.7). First,

$$
\mathbb{E}_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau_{t_i}^+ - 1} e^{\kappa(S_k - t)} \right] \leq \sum_{k=0}^\infty \mathbb{E}_x \left[ 1 \{ S_k \leq t \} e^{\kappa(S_k - t)} \right] = \int_0^t e^{-\kappa(t-y)} du(y),
$$

where $S_k := \max\{S_j: 0 \leq j \leq k\}$ and

$$
u(y) := \sum_{n=0}^\infty \mathbb{P}(S_n \leq y), \quad y \geq 0.
$$

Remark that $\nu$ is finite and satisfies the following renewal equation (see Heyde [15], Theorem 1):

$$
u(y) = 1_{\{0 \leq y\}} + F * \nu(y), \quad y \geq 0,
$$

with $F(s) := \mathbb{P}(S_1 \leq s), s \in \mathbb{R}$. According to the renewal theorem (see Heyde [15], Theorem 2 or Feller [13] page 362 (1.17) and page 381), $\int_0^t e^{-\kappa(t-y)} du(y) = O(1)$ as $t \to \infty$ (the limit exists in the nonarithmetic case). By linear transformation, we obtain that for any $\kappa > 0$, $\mathbb{E}_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau_{t_i}^+ - 1} e^{\kappa(S_k - t)} \right]$ is uniformly bounded for all $x \leq t$.

We now prove the lemma by induction on $m$. By independence,

$$
\mathbb{E}_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau_{t_i}^+ - 1} a_{k+1} e^{\kappa(S_k - t)} \right] = \sum_{k=0}^{\tau_{t_i}^+ - 1} \mathbb{E}_x \left[ e^{\kappa(S_k - t)}, k < \tau_{t_i}^+ - 1 \right] \mathbb{E}[a_1] \text{ is bounded by some constant (the law of } a_{k+1} \text{ does not depend on } x). \text{ This proves the lemma in the case } m = 1.
$$

Let $m \geq 2$ and assume that the lemma holds for $1, \ldots, m - 1$. Write $\chi_i := \sum_{k=i}^{\tau_{t_i}^+ - 1} a_{k+1} e^{\kappa(S_k - t)}$ for $0 \leq i < \tau_{t_i}^+$ and $\chi_{\tau_{t_i}^+} := 0$. Note that

$$
(x_0)^m = \sum_{i=0}^{\tau_{t_i}^+ - 1} [(\chi_i)^m - (\chi_{i+1})^m]
$$

$$
= \sum_{j=0}^{m-1} \binom{m}{j} \sum_{i=0}^{\tau_{t_i}^+ - 1} \sum_{j=0}^{\tau_{t_i}^+ - 1} a_{i+1}^{m-j} e^{(m-j)\kappa(S_i - t)} (\chi_{i+1})^j.
$$
Applying Markov’s property at \( i + 1 \), we get

\[
\mathbb{E}_x \left[ \chi_0^m \right] = \sum_{j=0}^{m-1} \binom{m-1}{j} \mathbb{E}_x \left[ \tau_{i+1}^+ \right] \sum_{i=0}^{m-1-j} a_i e^{(m-j+\kappa)\tau_i} \mathbb{E}_{S_i} \left[ \chi_{i+1}^j \right]
\]

\[
\leq c \sum_{j=0}^{m-1} \mathbb{E}_x \left[ \tau_{i+1}^+ \right] \sum_{i=0}^{m-1-j} a_i e^{(m-j+\kappa)\tau_i},
\]

since by the induction hypothesis \( \mathbb{E}_{S_i} \left[ \chi_{i+1}^j \right] \) is bounded by some constant. The last expectation is again uniformly bounded (the case \( m = 1 \) of the lemma), which proves that the lemma holds for \( m \), as desired. \( \square \)

9.2. Proof of Lemma 6. For \( a \in \mathbb{R} \), denote as before by \( T^+_a := S_{t_a} - a > 0 \) (resp., \( T^-_a := a - S_{t_a} > 0 \)) the overshoot (resp., undershoot) at level \( a \). Clearly the overshoot \( T^+_a \) is also the overshoot at the level \( a \) for the strict ascending ladder heights (\( H_n \)). By assumption (4.8), \( \max(S_1, 0) \) has finite \( \eta \)-exponential moment. This in view of Doney [12] implies that \( \mathbb{E}[e^{\delta H_1}] < \infty \) for any \( 0 < \delta < \eta \). Applying Chang ([11], Proposition 4.2) yields (4.9). Similarly for the undershoot \( T^-_a > 0 \): since \( \max(-S_1, 0) \) has a finite \( (1+\eta) \)-exponential moment, again (4.10) follows from Chang ([11], Proposition 4.2).

By (4.9) and (4.10), \( \max_{0 \leq k \leq \tau^-_0} |S_k| \leq L + T^+_L + T^-_0 \) is integrable under \( \mathbb{P}_a \). By applying the optimal stopping theorem, we get

\[
a = \mathbb{E}_a[S_{t^-_0} \wedge t^+_L] = \mathbb{E}_a[(S_{t^-_0} - S_{t^+_L})1_{\{\tau^-_0 < t^+_L\}}] + \mathbb{E}_a[S_{t^+_L}].
\]

Observe that \( \mathbb{E}_a[S_{t^+_L}] = L + \mathbb{E}_a[T^+_L] \leq L + c \) by (4.9). Since \( S_{t^-_0} - S_{t^+_L} < -L \), this implies (4.11). Exactly doing the same and using (4.10), we get (4.12).

Let us mention that by considering the martingale \( (S^2_j - \text{Var}(S_j))_{j \geq 1} \), which is uniformly integrable on \([0, \tau^-_0 \wedge t^+_L]\), we can find some constant \( c > 0 \) such that for all \( L > 1 \) and \( 0 \leq a \leq L \),

\[
(9.14) \quad \mathbb{E}_a[\tau^-_0 \wedge t^+_L] \leq cL^2.
\]

(i) Proof of (4.13). If \( L - a \geq \frac{L}{3} \), we deduce from (4.10) that

\[
\mathbb{E}_a[e^{-S^-_0} 1_{\{\tau^-_0 < \tau^+_L\}}] \leq \mathbb{E}_a[e^{-S^-_0}] \leq c \text{ which is less than } c' \frac{L-a+1}{L} \text{ if } c' \geq 3c.
\]

Let \( 0 < L - a < \frac{L}{2} \). Note that under \( \mathbb{P}_a \), \( \tau^-_0 < \tau^+_L \) implies that \( \tau^-_{L/2} \leq \tau^-_0 < \tau^+_L \). Then by the strong Markov property at \( \tau^-_{L/2} \),

\[
\mathbb{E}_a[e^{-S^-_0} 1_{\{\tau^-_0 < \tau^+_L\}}] = \mathbb{E}_a[e^{-S^-_0} 1_{\{\tau^-_{L/2} \leq \tau^-_0 < \tau^+_L\}}]
\]

\[
= \mathbb{E}_a[1_{\{\tau^-_{L/2} \leq \tau^+_L\}}] \mathbb{E}_{S_{\tau^-_{L/2}}} \left[ e^{-S^-_0} 1_{\{\tau^-_0 < \tau^+_L\}} \right]
\]

\[
\leq \mathbb{E}_a[1_{\{\tau^-_{L/2} \leq \tau^+_L\}} \{c + e^{-S^-_{L/2} \leq S^-_{L/2}} 1_{\{S_{\tau^-_{L/2} < 0}\}}\}],
\]
where we use the fact that for all $z := S_{t_L/2}^− ≥ 0, \mathbb{E}_z[e^{-S_{\tau_0^−}^−} \mathbb{1}_{\{\tau_0^− < \tau_L^+\}}] ≤ \mathbb{E}_z[e^{-S_{\tau_0^−}^−}] ≤ c$ by (4.10). Since $S_{t_L/2}^− < 0$ means that $T_{t_L/2}^− ≥ L/2$, we deduce from (4.10) that

$$\mathbb{E}_a[e^{-S_{t_L/2}^−} \mathbb{1}_{\{S_{t_L/2}^− < 0\}}] = \mathbb{E}_a[e^{L/2 + T_{t_L/2}^−} \mathbb{1}_{\{T_{t_L/2}^− ≥ L/2\}}] ≤ ce^{-δL/2}.$$ 

This together with (4.11) gives that

$$\mathbb{E}_a[e^{-S_{\tau_0^−}^−} \mathbb{1}_{\{\tau_0^− < \tau_L^+\}}] = \mathbb{E}_a[e^{L/2} \mathbb{1}_{\{\tau_0^− < \tau_L^+\}}] ≤ c.$$

(ii) Proof of (4.14). Let us show that

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{j=0}^{\tau_0^−-1} e^{-δS_j}\right] < \infty,$$

where we used Theorem 4 (and Theorem 6 if $S_1$ is lattice) of [34] for the bound of $\mathbb{E}[e^{-δS_j}, j < \tau_0^−]$. Let $(H_n^-, \sigma_n^-)_{n ≥ 0}$ be the strict ascending ladder heights and epochs of $-S$ (with $\sigma_0^- := 0$). For $a > 0$, we notice that

$$\mathbb{E}_a\left[\sum_{j=0}^{\tau_0^−-1} e^{-δS_j}\right] = \mathbb{E}_a\left[\sum_{j=0}^{\tau_a^-} e^{-δ(a+S_j)}\right] = \sum_{n=0}^{∞} \mathbb{E}_a\left[\sum_{\sigma_n^- ≤ j < \sigma_{n+1}^-} e^{-δ(a+S_j)} \mathbb{1}_{\{H_n^- ≤ a\}}\right] = \sum_{n=0}^{∞} \mathbb{E}_a\left[e^{-δ(a-H_n^-)} \mathbb{1}_{\{H_n^- ≤ a\}}\right] \mathbb{E}_a\left[\sum_{j=0}^{\tau_0^−-1} e^{-δS_j}\right],$$

by applying the strong Markov property at $\sigma_n^-$. We showed that $\mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{j=0}^{\tau_0^−-1} e^{-δS_j}\right] < \infty$. On the other hand, Lemma 5 applied to the random walk $(H_n^-)_{n ≥ 0}$ says that

$$\sup_{a > 0} \sum_{n=0}^{∞} \mathbb{E}_a\left[e^{-δ(a-H_n^-)} \mathbb{1}_{\{H_n^- ≤ a\}}\right] < \infty.$$
Hence \( \sup_{a \geq 0} \mathbb{E}_a[\sum_{j=0}^{t_0^- - 1} e^{-\delta S_j}] < \infty \). Similarly, by considering the random walk \( L - S_j \), we get that \( \mathbb{E}_a[\sum_{j=0}^{t_L^+ - 1} e^{-\delta (L - S_j)}] \) is uniformly bounded by some constant. This proves (4.14).

(iii) Proof of (4.15). Considering the value of the time \( \tau_0^- \), then using Markov’s property, we have

\[
\mathbb{E}_a[e^{S\tau_0^- - 1 - S\tau_0^-}] = \sum_{k \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_a[e^{S\tau_0^- - 1 - S\tau_0^-} 1_{\{\tau_0^- = k\}}] \\
= \sum_{k \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_a[h(-S_{k-1}) 1_{\{\tau_0^- \geq k\}}]
\]

where for any \( y \in \mathbb{R} \), \( h(y) := \mathbb{E}[e^{-S_1 1_{\{S_1 \leq y\}}}] \leq e^{\delta y} \mathbb{E}[e^{-(1+\delta)S_1}] = ce^{\delta y} \) for \( \delta > 0 \) small enough. Hence,

\[
\mathbb{E}_a[e^{S\tau_0^- - 1 - S\tau_0^-}] \leq c \sum_{k \geq 0} \mathbb{E}_a[e^{-\delta S_k}]
\]

and (4.15) follows from (4.14).

(iv) Proof of (4.16) and (4.17): Clearly (4.17) follows from (4.16) by considering the random walk \( (L - S_j)_{j \geq 0} \). It suffices to prove (4.16). If \( L - a \geq L/3 \), there is nothing to prove since \( \mathbb{E}_a[\sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+} e^{-\delta S_j}] \leq \mathbb{E}_a[\sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_0^-} e^{-\delta S_j}] \) is less than some constant by (4.14).

Considering \( L - a < L/3 \), we have

\[
\mathbb{E}_a\left[ \sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+} e^{-\delta S_j} \right] \\
= \mathbb{E}_a\left[ 1_{\{\tau_{L/2}^- \geq \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+\}} \sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+} e^{-\delta S_j} \right] \\
+ \mathbb{E}_a\left[ 1_{\{\tau_{L/2}^- < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+\}} \sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+} e^{-\delta S_j} \right] \\
\leq \mathbb{E}_a[e^{-\delta L/2(\tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+)}] + \mathbb{E}_a\left[ 1_{\{\tau_{L/2}^- < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+\}} \sum_{\tau_{L/2}^- \leq j < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+} e^{-\delta S_j} \right] \\
\leq cL^2 e^{-\delta L/2} + \mathbb{E}_a\left[ 1_{\{\tau_{L/2}^- < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+\}} \mathbb{E}_{S_{\tau_{L/2}^-}}[\sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+} e^{-\delta S_j}] \right],
\]

by using (9.14) and the strong Markov property at \( \tau_{L/2}^- \). Let \( x := S_{\tau_{L/2}^-} < L/2 \). If \( x < 0 \), then under \( \mathbb{P}_x \), \( \tau_0^- = 0 \) and \( \mathbb{E}_x[\sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+} e^{-\delta S_j}] = 0 \), whereas if \( 0 \leq x <
\[ L/2, \mathbb{E}_X \left[ \sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+} e^{-\delta S_j} \right] \leq c \] by (4.14). Then we get

\[
\begin{align*}
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ \sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+} e^{-\delta S_j} \right] & \leq cL^2 e^{-\delta L/2} + c \mathbb{P}_a (\tau_{L/2}^- < \tau_0^- \wedge \tau_L^+) \\
& \leq cL^2 e^{-\delta L/2} + c \mathbb{P}_a (\tau_{L/2}^- < \tau_L^+) \\
& \leq cL^2 e^{-\delta L/2} + \frac{L - a + c'}{L/2},
\end{align*}
\]

by using (4.11). This proves (4.16).

(v) Proof of (4.18): By monotonicity, it is sufficient to prove (4.18) for \(0 < \delta < \eta\). Then notice that

\[
\begin{align*}
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ e^{-S_{\tau_0^-}} 1_{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+} \sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_0^-} e^{-\delta(L - S_j)} \right] \\
= \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{E}_a \left[ 1_{\{n \leq \tau_L^+ \wedge \tau_0^- \}, S_n < 0} e^{-S_n} \sum_{0 \leq j < n} e^{-\delta(L - S_j)} \right].
\end{align*}
\]

Applying Markov’s property of \(S\) at \(n - 1\) and using the fact that for all \(x \geq 0\), \(\mathbb{E}_x [e^{-S_1} 1_{\{S_1 < 0\}}] = \mathbb{E}[e^{-x-S_1} 1_{\{S_1 < -x\}}] \leq c(\delta) e^{-(1+\delta)x}\) by (4.8) (recall that \(0 < \delta < \eta\)), we get that

\[
\begin{align*}
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ e^{-S_{\tau_0^-}} 1_{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+} \sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_0^-} e^{-\delta(L - S_j)} \right] & \lesssim \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{E}_a \left[ 1_{\{n \leq \tau_L^+ \wedge \tau_0^- \}, S_n < 0} e^{-S_n} \sum_{0 \leq j < n} e^{-\delta(L - S_j)} \right] \\
& \leq c \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{E}_a \left[ 1_{\{n \leq \tau_L^+ \wedge \tau_0^- \}, S_n < 0} e^{-S_n} \sum_{0 \leq j < n} e^{-\delta(L - S_j)} \right] \\
& \leq c \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \mathbb{E}_a \left[ 1_{\{j < \tau_L^+ \wedge \tau_0^- \}} e^{-\delta(L - S_j)} \sum_{0 \leq m < \tau_L^+ \wedge \tau_0^-} e^{-(1+\delta)S_m} \right],
\end{align*}
\]

where the last equality follows from Markov’s property at \(j\). Applying (4.16) and (4.17), we get that

\[
\begin{align*}
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ e^{-S_{\tau_0^-}} 1_{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+} \sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_0^-} e^{-\delta(L - S_j)} \right] & \lesssim \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \mathbb{E}_a \left[ 1_{\{j < \tau_L^+ \wedge \tau_0^- \}} e^{-\delta(L - S_j)} \frac{L - S_j + 1}{L} \right] \\
& \leq \frac{c'}{L} \mathbb{E}_a \left[ \sum_{0 \leq j < \tau_L^+ \wedge \tau_0^-} e^{-(\delta/2)(L - S_j)} \right] \leq c \frac{a + 1}{L^2}.
\end{align*}
\]
proving (4.18).

We mention that (9.15) also holds with \( \delta = 0 \), which implies that

\[
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ e^{-S_{\tau_0^-}} 1_{\{\tau_0^- < \tau_L^+ \}} \right] \leq c \mathbb{E}_a \left[ \tau_0^- \land \tau_L^+ \right] \leq c' L^2
\]

(9.16) \( \forall L \geq 1, 0 \leq a \leq L \).

9.3. Proof of Lemmas 7 and 8. Keeping the notation \( T_a^- \) for the undershoot at
level \( a \), we have as before for any \( 0 < r < \eta_1 \),

(9.17) \[ \mathbb{P}_b(T_a^- > x) \leq c(r) e^{-rx} \quad \forall a \leq b, \forall x > 0. \]

**Proof of Lemma 7.**

(i) Proof of (4.22). It is a straightforward consequence of (9.17).

(ii) Proof of (4.23). Let us introduce the tilted measure \( \hat{\mathbb{P}}_a \) defined by
\[
\frac{d\hat{\mathbb{P}}_a}{d\mathbb{P}_a} |_{\sigma(S_0, \ldots, S_n)} := e^{\gamma(S_n - S_0)}. \]
Under \( \hat{\mathbb{P}}_a \), the random walk drifts to \(+\infty\). We write

\[
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ \sum_{0 \leq \ell < \tau_L^+} (1 + L - S_\ell)^a e^{\gamma S_\ell} \right]
\]

\[
= \sum_{\ell \geq 0} \mathbb{E}_a \left[ (1 + L - S_\ell)^a e^{\gamma S_\ell} 1_{\{\ell < \tau_L^+ \}} \right]
\]

\[
= e^{\gamma a} \sum_{\ell \geq 0} \hat{\mathbb{E}}_a \left[ (1 + L - S_\ell)^a e^{(r - \gamma) S_\ell} 1_{\{\ell < \tau_L^+ \}} \right]
\]

\[
= e^{\gamma a} e^{(r - \gamma) L} \hat{\mathbb{E}}_a \left[ \sum_{0 \leq \ell < \tau_L^+} (1 + L - S_\ell)^a e^{(r - \gamma) (S_\ell - L)} \right]
\]

\[
\leq c e^{\gamma a} e^{(r - \gamma) L} \hat{\mathbb{E}}_a \left[ \sum_{0 \leq \ell < \tau_L^+} e^{(r - \gamma) (S_\ell - L)/2} \right].
\]

Therefore, we only have to show that

\[
\sup_{a \geq 0} \hat{\mathbb{E}}_a \left[ \sum_{0 \leq \ell < \tau_L^+} e^{(r - \gamma) (S_\ell - L)/2} \right] \leq c,
\]

which is done by the same argument as in the proof of (4.14).

(iii) Proof of (4.24). We have

\[
\mathbb{E}_a \left[ \sum_{\ell = 0}^{\min(\tau_0^-, \tau_L^+)} (1 + L - S_\ell)^a e^{\gamma S_\ell} \right] = e^{\gamma a} \hat{\mathbb{E}}_a \left[ \sum_{\ell = 0}^{\min(\tau_0^-, \tau_L^+)} (1 + L - S_\ell)^a \right]
\]

\[
= e^{\gamma a} \hat{\mathbb{E}}_a \left[ \sum_{\ell = 0}^{\min(\tau_0^-, \tau_L^-)} (1 + L - a - S_\ell)^a \right].
\]
Remark that 
\( (1 + L - a - S_\ell)^\alpha \leq c(1 + L - a)^\alpha + c|S_\ell|^\alpha \mathbf{1}_{\{S_\ell<0\}} \) and that 
\( \mathbb{E}[\sum_{\ell\geq 0}|S_\ell|^\alpha \mathbf{1}_{\{S_\ell<0\}}] < \infty \) (indeed observe that for any \( \gamma' \in (0, \gamma) \) there exists \( c(\alpha, \gamma') \) such that 
\( \sum_{\ell\geq 0}|S_\ell|^\alpha \mathbf{1}_{\{S_\ell<0\}} \leq c(\alpha, \gamma') \sum_{\ell\geq 0}e^{-\gamma'S_\ell} \), whose expectation 
under \( \mathbb{P} \) is finite; see Kesten [22]). Therefore, we get 
\[ \tilde{E}\left[\sum_{\ell=0}^{\min(\tau_{\gamma-x}, \tau_{L-a})} (1 + L - a - S_\ell)^\alpha \right] \leq c'(1 + L - a)^\alpha \tilde{E}[\tau_{L-a}^+_
+ + c' \left| S_\ell \right|^{\alpha 1_{\{S_\ell<0\}}} \right\} \]
and that 
\[ \tilde{E}\left[\sum_{\ell=0}^{\tau_{\gamma-x}} (1 + L - a - S_\ell)^\alpha \right] \leq c(1 + L - a)^{\alpha + 1}, \]
which completes the proof of the lemma. \( \square \)

**Proof of Lemma 8.** First, we remark that it is enough to prove the lemma for integer \( p \). In fact let us assume that (i) holds for any integer \( p \) satisfying the hypothesis in (i). Now for \( 0 \leq p < \gamma/b \), we choose an arbitrary integer \( k \) larger than \( p \). Then (4.25) holds for any \( (\tilde{a}_\ell, \tilde{b}) \) [in lieu of \( (a_\ell, b) \)] satisfying the hypothesis in (i): \( 0 \leq k < \gamma/\tilde{b} \) and \( \mathbb{E}[(1 + 1|S_1|e^{-\eta S_1})^k_\gamma] < \infty \). Observe that \( \tilde{a}_\ell := (a_\ell)^{p/k} \) for any \( \ell \geq 1 \) and \( \tilde{b} := \frac{pb}{k} \) fulfill the above hypothesis, hence 
\[ \mathbb{E}_x\left[ e^{-\eta S_{\tau_{\gamma-x}}} \left( \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_{\gamma-x}} e^{(pb/k)S_{\ell-1}(a_\ell)^{p/k}} \right)^k \right] \leq c_k e^{bkx} = c_k e^{bp_x} \quad \forall x \geq 0. \]
Since \( k \geq p \), we have by concavity that 
\[ \mathbb{E}_x\left[ e^{-\eta S_{\tau_{\gamma-x}}} \left( \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_{\gamma-x}} e^{bS_{\ell-1}a_\ell} \right)^p \right] \leq \mathbb{E}_x\left[ e^{-\eta S_{\tau_{\gamma-x}}} \left( \sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_{\gamma-x}} e^{(pb/k)S_{\ell-1}(a_\ell)^{p/k}} \right)^k \right] \leq c_k e^{bp_x}. \]
Hence it is enough to show (i) with an integer \( p \). The same is true for (ii).

Now we assume \( p \) is an integer, and we shall use Markov’s property to expand the power. Let either \( \chi := \tau_{\gamma-x} \) or \( \chi := \min(\tau_{\gamma-x}, \tau_{L+1}) \) and consider a measurable function \( f: \mathbb{R} \to \mathbb{R}_+ \). Define 
\[ A_{\chi,f}(x,k) := \mathbb{E}_x\left[ e^{-\eta S_{\tau_{\gamma-x}}} \left( \sum_{\ell=1}^x f(S_{\ell-1}a_\ell) \right)^k \right], \quad k \geq 0, x \in \mathbb{R}, \]
and we mention that \( A_{\chi,f}(x,0) = e^{-\eta x} \) if \( x < 0 \), \( A_{\chi,f}(x,k) = 0 \) if \( x < 0 \) and \( k \geq 1 \). Let \( k \geq 1 \) and \( Y_i := \sum_{\ell=i}^x f(S_{\ell-1}a_\ell) \) for \( 1 \leq i \leq \tau_{\gamma-x} \), \( Y_{\chi+1} := 0 \). Then 
\[ Y_1^k = \sum_{i=1}^x (Y_i^k - Y_{i+1}^k) = \sum_{r=1}^k C_r^x \sum_{i=1}^x (f(S_{i-1}))^r (a_i)^r (Y_{i+1} - Y_i)^{k-r}. \]
Applying Markov’s property at \( i \) gives that
\[
A_{\chi,f}(x,k) = \sum_{r=1}^{k} C_{k}^{r} \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{E}[1_{i \leq \chi}(f(S_{i-1}))^{r} (a_{i})^{r} A_{\chi,f}(S_{i},k-r)]
\]
(9.18)
\[
= B_{\chi}(x,k) + C_{\chi}(x,k),
\]
with
\[
B_{\chi}(x,k) := \sum_{r=1}^{k} C_{k}^{r} \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{E}[1_{i \leq \chi,S_{i} \geq 0}(f(S_{i-1}))^{r} (a_{i})^{r} e^{-\eta S_{i}}],
\]
\[
C_{\chi}(x,k) := \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{E}[1_{i \leq \chi,S_{i} < 0}(f(S_{i-1}))^{k} (a_{i})^{k} e^{-\eta S_{i}}].
\]

In the rest of the proof of the lemma, we shall use twice the notation \( A_{\chi}(x,k), B_{\chi}(x,k), C_{\chi}(x,k) \) but without the subscript \( \chi \) and take \( \chi = \tau_{0}^{-}, f(y) = e^{by} \) in the proof of (i) and \( \chi = \min(\tau_{0}^{-}, \tau_{L}^{+}), f = (L - y + 1)^{a} e^{by} \) in the proof of (ii).

Proof of (i). Let in this proof \( A(x,k) = \mathbb{E}_{x}[e^{-\eta S_{\tau^{0}^{-}}} (\sum_{\ell=1}^{\tau_{0}^{-}} e^{bS_{\ell-1}} a_{\ell})^{k}] \). We prove (4.25) by induction on \( k \).

The case \( k = 0 \) follows from (4.22). Let \( 1 \leq k < \gamma / b \) and assume that we know that \( A(x,j) \leq c_{j} e^{jbx} \) for all \( 0 \leq j \leq k - 1 \) and \( x \geq 0 \). We have to show that \( A(x,k) \leq c_{k} e^{kbx} \).

Using the induction hypothesis, \( A(S_{\ell},k-r) \leq c_{k-r} e^{(k-r) bS_{\ell}} \) if \( S_{\ell} \geq 0 \). From (9.18), we have
\[
B(x,k) \leq c \sum_{r=1}^{k} \sum_{\ell \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_{x}[e^{k b S_{\ell-1}} (a_{\ell})^{r} e^{(k-r) b \Delta S_{\ell}}, \ell \leq \tau_{0}^{-}]
\]
\[
\leq c \sum_{r=1}^{k} \sum_{\ell \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_{x}[e^{k b S_{\ell-1}} (a_{\ell})^{r} e^{(k-r) b \Delta S_{\ell}}],
\]
with \( \Delta S_{\ell} := S_{\ell} - S_{\ell-1} \) for \( \ell \geq 1 \). By the independence of \( (a_{\ell}, \Delta S_{\ell}) \), we get that
\[
B(x,k) \leq c \sum_{r=1}^{k} \mathbb{E}_{x}[(a_{1})^{r} e^{(k-r) b S_{1}}] \sum_{\ell \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_{x}[e^{k b S_{\ell-1}}]
\]
\[
= c e^{k b x} \sum_{r=1}^{k} \mathbb{E}[(a_{1})^{r} e^{(k-r) b S_{1}}] \sum_{\ell \geq 1} (\mathbb{E}[e^{k b S_{1}}])^{\ell-1}.
\]

Observe that
\[
(9.19) \sum_{r=1}^{k} \mathbb{E}[(a_{1})^{r} e^{(k-r) b S_{1}}] \leq \mathbb{E}[(a_{1} + e^{b S_{1}})^{k}] \leq 2^{k} (\mathbb{E}[a_{1}^{k}] + \mathbb{E}[e^{b S_{1}}]) < \infty,
\]
and $\mathbb{E}[e^{kS_1}] < 1$ since $k < \gamma/b$. Hence $B(x, k) \leq ce^{kbx}$.

It remains to deal with $C(x, k)$. Observe from (9.18) that

$$C(x, k) = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{E}_x[\mathbb{E}_{S_{i-1}}\left\{e^{bkS_{i-1}}(a_1)^k1_{[\tau^+_0 > i-1]}1_{[S_i < 0]}e^{-\eta S_i}\right\}]$$

by Markov's property at $i-1$. Since $y := S_{i-1} > 0$,

$$\mathbb{E}_y[1_{[S_i < 0]}(a_1)^k e^{-\eta S_1}] = e^{-\eta y}\mathbb{E}[1_{[S_i < -y]}(a_1)^k e^{-\eta S_1}] \leq \mathbb{E}[1_{[S_i < 0]}(a_1)^k e^{-\eta S_1}].$$

It follows that

$$C(x, k) \leq c \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{E}_x[e^{bkS_{i-1}}] \leq c'e^{bkx},$$

since $bk < \gamma$. This yields that $A(x, k) = B(x, k) + C(x, k) \leq ce^{bkx}$ proving (4.25).

**Proof of (ii).** Write in this proof

$$A(x, j) := \mathbb{E}_x\left[e^{-\eta S_{\tau^+_0}}\left(\sum_{\ell=1}^{\min(\tau^+_0, \tau^+_\ell)} (1 + L - S_{\ell-1})^\alpha e^{bS_{\ell-1}}a_\ell\right)^j\right], \quad x \in \mathbb{R}, j \geq 0.$$

We mention that $A(x, 0) = e^{-\eta x}$ if $x < 0$ and for $j \geq 1$, $A(x, j) = 0$ if $x < 0$ or $x > L$.

From (9.18), $A(x, k) = B(x, k) + C(x, k)$ with

$$B(x, k) = \sum_{r=1}^{k} C_k^r \sum_{j \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_x\left[(1 + L - S_{j-1})^\alpha e^{r bS_{j-1}}(a_j)^r\right] \times A(S_j, k-r)1_{[j < \min(\tau^+_0, \tau^+_\ell)]},$$

(9.20)

$$C(x, k) = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{E}_x\left[(L - S_{i-1} + 1)^\alpha a_i^k e^{bkS_{i-1}}e^{-\eta S_i}1_{[i = \tau^+_0 < \tau^+_\ell]}\right].$$

(9.21)

We now prove (4.26) by induction on $p$, where $p$ equals some integer $m \geq 1$.

First, let $m < \gamma/b$, and assume (4.26) holds for all $A(x, j)$ with $0 \leq j \leq m-1$.

By (9.20),

$$B(x, m) \leq c \sum_{r=1}^{m} \sum_{j \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_x\left[(1 + L - S_{j-1})^\alpha e^{r bS_{j-1}}(a_j)^r(1 + L - S_j)^\alpha (m-r)\right] \times e^{b(m-r)S_j}, j < \tau^+_\ell.$$
Write as before $\Delta S_j = S_j - S_{j-1}$. Notice that for any $j < \tau_L^+$, $(1 + L - S_j)^{\alpha_m} e^{b(m-r)\Delta S_j} \leq c(1 + L - S_{j-1})^{\alpha_m} e^{b(m-r)\Delta S_j}$. By the independence of $(a_j, \Delta S_j)$, it is easy to see that the above expectation under $E_x$ is less than

$$c\mathbb{E}_x[\alpha_m(1 + e^{b(m-r)\Delta S_j})^\Delta S_j] = c\mathbb{E}_x[(1 + L - S_{j-1})^{\alpha_m} e^{b(m-r)\Delta S_j}, j < \tau_L^+].$$

Since $\mathbb{E}_x[\alpha_m(1 + e^{b(m-r)\Delta S_j})] < \infty$ by (9.19), this implies that

$$B(x, m) \leq c\sum_{j \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_x[(1 + L - S_{j-1})^{\alpha_m} e^{b(m-r)\Delta S_j}, j < \tau_L^+]$$

(9.22)

$$= c'e^{mbx} \sum_{j \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_x[(1 + L - x - S_{j-1})^{\alpha_m} e^{b(m-r)\Delta S_j}, j < \tau_L^+]$$

$$\leq c(1 + L - x)^{\alpha_m} e^{mbx},$$

where the last estimate follows from the facts that for $j < \tau_L^-$, $(1 + L - x - S_{j-1})^{\alpha_m} \leq c(1 + L - x)^{\alpha_m} + c|S_{j-1}|^{\alpha_m}$ and that $\sum_{j \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_x[|S_{j-1}|^{\alpha_m} e^{b(m-r)\Delta S_j}] < \infty$ (since $mb < \gamma$).

By Markov’s property at $i - 1$,

$$C(x, m) = \sum_{i=1}^\infty \mathbb{E}_x[(L - S_{i-1} + 1)^{\alpha_m} e^{b(m-r)\Delta S_i} \mathbb{E}_{S_{i-1}}[1_{(S_{i-1})} a_i e^{-\eta S_i}], i - 1 < \tau_0^- < \tau_L^+]$$

As in the proof of (i), $\mathbb{E}_{S_{i-1}}[1_{(S_{i-1})} a_i e^{-\eta S_i}]$ is less than some constant, hence

$$C(x, m) \leq c\sum_{i=1}^\infty \mathbb{E}_x[(L - S_{i-1} + 1)^{\alpha_m} e^{b(m-r)\Delta S_i}, i - 1 < \tau_0^- < \tau_L^+]$$

(9.23)

$$\leq c'(1 + L - x)^{\alpha_m} e^{mbx},$$

by (9.22). Therefore, $A(x, m) = B(x, m) + C(x, m) \leq c(1 + L - x)^{\alpha_m} e^{mbx}$ proving the case $m$.

Consider now the case when $\gamma/b = m$ is an integer. Since $m - r < \gamma/b$ for any $1 \leq r \leq m$, $B(y, m - r) \leq c_{m-r, a}(1 + L - y)^{\alpha_{m-r}} e^{(m-r)y}$ for $0 \leq y \leq L$. By (9.20),

$$B(x, m) \leq c\sum_{r=1}^m \sum_{j \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_x[(1 + L - S_{j-1})^{\alpha_m} e^{b\Delta S_j} (a_j)^r (1 + L - S_j)^{\alpha_{m-r}}$$

$$\times e^{(m-r)\Delta S_j} 1_{[j < \tau_0^- + \tau_L^+]}].$$

Repeating the same argument as before, we get that

$$B(x, m) \leq c\mathbb{E}_x\left[\sum_{j=1}^{\min(\tau_0^-, \tau_L^+)} (1 + L - S_{j-1})^{\alpha_m} e^{b\Delta S_j} \right] \leq c(1 + L - x)^{1+\alpha_m} e^{mbx},$$
by (4.24). According to (9.23), we get the same estimate for \( C(x, m) \), which proves the case \( m = \gamma/b \).

It remains to deal with the case \( m > \gamma/b \). Let \( m_1 := \lfloor \gamma/b \rfloor + 1 \) be the least integer larger than \( \gamma/b \) and assume that \( \mathbb{E}[a_1^{m_1}] < \infty, \mathbb{E}[b^{(m_1-1)S_1}] < \infty \). We check that (4.26) is satisfied for \( m = m_1 \): applying (9.20) and using the already proved results for \( A(x, m_1 - r) \) (since \( m_1 - r \leq \gamma/b \)), we get that \( B(x, m_1) \) is bounded by

\[
c \sum_{r=1}^{m_1} \sum_{j \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_x \left[ (1 + L - S_{j-1})^{a_r} e^{rbS_{j-1}}(a_j)^r (1 + L - S_j)^{1+\alpha(m_1-r)} \times e^{b(m_1-r)S_j}1_{\{j < \tau^+_L\}} \right],
\]

(the extra 1 in the power comes from the possibility that \( m_1 - 1 = \gamma/b \)). As before, we get that \( B(x, m_1) \leq c' \sum_{j \geq 1} \mathbb{E}_x \left[ (1 + L - S_{j-1})^{1+a_{m_1}e^{m_1bS_{j-1}}}, j < \tau^+_L \right] \leq ce^{\gamma(x-L)+m_1bL} \), by applying (4.24). The same estimate holds for \( C(x, m_1) \) by using (9.22). This proves that (4.26) holds for \( m = m_1 \). The other \( m > m_1 \) can be treated by induction on \( m \), and by using the same arguments as before, we omit the details. \( \square \)

9.4. Proofs of Lemmas 9, 10, 11 and 12. We give in this subsection the proofs of these lemmas used in the proof of Theorem 3.

PROOF OF LEMMA 9. Write in this proof

\[
A(9.24) := \left\{ \tau_L^+ - K \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_L^+} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{O}_k} H^u(t) > 0 \right\},
\]

\[
(9.24)
\]

\[
B(9.24) := \{ \beta_t(w_{\tau^+_L}) \leq \tau^+_L - K \}.
\]

Let us first observe that Markov’s inequality together with part (i) of Corollary 3 imply

\[
Q^+(A(9.24) | \mathcal{G}_\infty) \leq \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_L^+ - K} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{O}_k} \pi(V(u), t),
\]

\[
(9.25)
\]

with

\[
\pi(x, t) := \mathbb{E}_x [H(t)]1_{\{x \leq t\}} + 1_{\{x > t\}}.
\]

Furthermore, part (ii) of Corollary 3 yields for any \( x \leq t \)

\[
\mathbb{E}_x [H(t)] = R(x)e^{\alpha x}Q^{+}_x \left[ e^{-eS_{\tau^+_L}} R(S_{\tau^+_L})1_{\{\tau^+_L < \tau_0^\pm\}} \right] \leq \frac{R(x)}{R(t)} e^{\alpha x} e^{-\alpha t} \leq e^{\alpha(x-t)},
\]
from which we deduce that $\pi(x, t) \leq e^{\varphi(x-t)} I_{\{x \leq t\}} + 1_{\{x > t\}} \leq e^{\varphi(x-t)}$. Therefore, we obtain

$$Q^+_x(A_{(9.24)} | \mathcal{F}_\infty) \leq \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - K - 1} e^{\varphi(S_k - t)} \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_{k+1}} e^{\varphi V(u)}.$$ 

On the other hand, by the definition of $\beta_t(w^{+})$ [see (1.14)],

$$1_{B_{(9.24)}}(t) \leq \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - K - 1} e^{\varphi(S_k - t)} (\mathcal{B}(w_{k+1}^{+}))^0.$$ 

It follows that

$$Q^+_x(A_{(9.24)} \cup B_{(9.24)} | \mathcal{F}_\infty) \leq \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - K - 1} e^{\varphi(S_k - t)} b_{k+1} := \Upsilon(t),$$

with $b_{k+1} := \sum_{u \in \mathcal{U}_{k+1}} e^{\varphi V(u)} + (\mathcal{B}(w_{k+1}^{+}))^0$. Recall that under $Q^+_x$, $(S_k, b_k)_{k \geq 0}$ is a Markov chain; see Proposition 2. Fix a $\lambda > 0$. Then we claim that the following double limits equal zero:

$$\limsup_{K \to \infty} \limsup_{t \to \infty} Q^+_x(\exists k < \tau^+_t - K : t - S_k < \lambda, \tau^+_t > K) = 0.$$ (9.27)

In fact, let $t$ be large, and observe that

$$Q^+_x(\exists k < \tau^+_t - K : t - S_k < \lambda, \tau^+_t > K) \leq Q^+_x(\tau^+_t - K < \lambda + K < \tau^+_t),$$

which by Markov’s property at $\tau^+_t - \lambda$, is less than $\sup_{t - \lambda < y < t} Q^+_y(K < \tau^+_t)$. By the absolute continuity between $Q^+_y$ and $Q_y$,

$$Q^+_y(K < \tau^+_t) = Q_y \left[ \chi_{[K < \tau^+_t, \tau^-_0]} \frac{R(S_K)}{R(y)} \right] \leq \frac{R(t)}{R(y)} Q_y(\tau^+_t > K) = \frac{R(t)}{R(y)} Q(\tau^+_t > K).$$

It follows that

$$\limsup_{t \to \infty} Q^+_x(\exists k < \tau^+_t - K : t - S_k < \lambda, \tau^+_t > K) \leq Q(\tau^+_t > K) \limsup_{t \to \infty} \frac{R(t)}{R(t - \lambda)} = Q(\tau^+_t > K),$$

which goes to 0 as $K \to \infty$. This proves (9.27).

Let

$$E_1(t, K) := \{ \forall k < \tau^+_t - K : t - S_k \geq \lambda, \tau^+_t > K \}.$$
We have \( Q^+_x(\tau^+_t > K) \to 1 \) as \( t \to \infty \), which in view of \((9.27)\) yields that for any small \( \varepsilon > 0 \), there exists some \( K_0 = K_0(\varepsilon, \lambda) > 0 \) such that for all \( K \geq K_0 \), there exists some \( t_0(K, \varepsilon, \lambda) \) satisfying
\[
Q^+_x(\tau^+_t + t > K) \to 1 \quad \text{as} \quad t \to \infty,
\]
which in view of \((9.27)\) yields that for any small \( \varepsilon > 0 \), there exists some \( K_0 = K_0(\varepsilon, \lambda) > 0 \) such that for all \( K \geq K_0 \), there exists some \( t_0(K, \varepsilon, \lambda) \) satisfying
\[
(9.28) \quad Q^+_x(E_1(t, K))^c \leq \varepsilon \quad \forall t \geq t_0.
\]
We claim that there exists some small \( \delta > 0 \) such that
\[
(9.29) \quad \sup_{z \geq 0} Q^+_x[b^+_1] < \infty,
\]
\[
(9.30) \quad \limsup_{t \to \infty} Q^+_x[\tau^+_t - 1 \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - 1} e^{\varepsilon(S_k - t)}] < \infty
\]
for any \( \kappa > 0 \).
Assuming for the moment \((9.29)\) and \((9.30)\), we prove the lemma as follows:
\[
E_2(t, K) := \bigcap_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - K - 1} \{ b_{k+1} \leq e^{(\varepsilon/2)(t - S_k)} \} \cap \{ \tau^+_t > K \}.
\]
By \((9.26)\) and on \( E_2(t, K) \cap E_1(t, K) \) which is \( \mathcal{G}_\infty \)-measurable,
\[
Q^+_x(A_{(9.24)} \cup B_{(9.24)}|\mathcal{G}_\infty) \leq \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - K - 1} e^{e(t/2)(S_k - t)},
\]
which is less than \( e^{-\rho\lambda/4} \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - K - 1} e^{(\varepsilon/4)(S_k - t)} \) since on \( E_1(t, K) \), \( S_k - t \leq -\lambda \) for \( k < \tau^+_t - K \). This with \((9.28)\) imply that for all \( t \geq t_0 \),
\[
(9.31) \quad Q^+_x(A_{(9.24)} \cup B_{(9.24)}) \leq \varepsilon + Q^+_x(E_2(t, K)^c \cap E_1(t, K)) + e^{-\rho\lambda/4} Q^+_x[\tau^+_t - 1 \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - 1} e^{(\varepsilon/4)(S_k - t)}].
\]
On the other hand, fix the constant \( \delta > 0 \) in \((9.29)\), and we have
\[
Q^+_x(E_2(t, K)^c \cap E_1(t, K)) \leq Q^+_x[1_{E_1(t, K)} \sum_{k<\tau^+_t-K} (b_{k+1})^\delta e^{-(\delta\varepsilon/2)(t - S_k)}]
\]
\[
\leq e^{-\delta\rho\lambda/4} Q^+_x[1_{E_1(t, K)} \sum_{k<\tau^+_t-K} (b_{k+1})^\delta e^{-(\delta\varepsilon/4)(t - S_k)}]
\]
\[
\leq e^{-\delta\rho\lambda/4} Q^+_x[\sum_{k<\tau^+_t} (b_{k+1})^\delta e^{-(\delta\varepsilon/4)(t - S_k)}].
\]
Applying Markov’s property at \( k \) gives that
\[
Q^+_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - 1} e^{(\delta \varrho/4)(S_k - t)} (b_{k+1})^\delta \right] = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} Q^+_x \left[ 1_{\{k < \tau^+_t\}} e^{(\delta \varrho/4)(S_k - t)} Q^+_x (b_1^\delta) \right]
\]
\[
\leq \sup_{z \geq 0} Q^+_x (b_1^\delta) \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - 1} e^{(\delta \varrho/4)(S_k - t)}.
\]

By (9.29) and (9.30), we get some constant \( c \) independent of \( \lambda \) and \( t \) (the constant \( c \) may depend on \( x \), \( \delta \)) such that
\[
Q^+_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - 1} e^{(\delta \varrho/4)(S_k - t)} (b_{k+1})^\delta \right] \leq c
\]
and
\[
Q^+_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - 1} e^{(\varrho/4)(S_k - t)} \right] \leq c.
\]

Going back to (9.31), we obtain that for all \( K \geq K_0 \),
\[
\limsup_{t \to \infty} Q^+_x (A_{(9.24)} \cup B_{(9.24)}) \leq \varepsilon + ce^{-\delta \varrho \lambda/4} + ce^{-\varrho \lambda/4}.
\]

Letting \( \lambda \to \infty \) and \( \varepsilon \to 0 \), we get that
\[
\limsup_{K \to \infty} \limsup_{t \to \infty} Q^+_x (A_{(9.24)} \cup B_{(9.24)}) = 0.
\]

It remains to show (9.29) and (9.30). By (5.22),
\[
Q^+_x (b_1^\delta) = E_z \left[ \frac{e^{-\varrho z}}{R(z)} \sum_{|u|=1} 1_{\{V(u) \geq 0\}} R(V(u)) e^{\varrho V(u)} \left( \sum_{\tilde{v} \neq u} e^{\varrho (V(u) - z)} + B(u)^\delta \right) \right]
\]
\[
= E \left[ \frac{1}{R(z)} \sum_{|u|=1} 1_{\{V(u) \geq -z\}} R(V(u) + z) e^{\varrho V(u)} \left( \sum_{\tilde{v} \neq u} e^{\varrho V(u)} + B(u)^\delta \right) \right]
\]
\[
\leq \begin{cases} 
  E \left[ \sum_{|u|=1} (1 + |V(u)|) e^{\varrho V(u)} \left( \sum_{|v|=1} e^{\varrho V(v)} + B(u)^\delta \right) \right], & \text{(critical case)}, \\
  E \left[ \sum_{|u|=1} e^{\varrho V(u)} \right]^{1+\delta} + \left( \sum_{|u|=1} e^{\varrho V(u)} \right) B(u)^\delta, & \text{(subcritical case)}, 
\end{cases}
\]

since \( R(z) \sim C R z \) in the critical case and \( R(z) \sim C R \) in the subcritical case as \( z \to \infty \). If \( \delta > 0 \) is sufficiently small, the later expectations are finite by (1.13) together with (1.3) and (1.4), respectively, which yields (9.29).

To show (9.30), we deduce from the absolute continuity between \( Q^+_x \) and \( Q_x \) that
\[
(9.32) \quad Q^+_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - 1} e^{\varrho (S_k - t)} \right] = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} Q_x \left[ 1_{\{k < \tau_k^+ \land \tau_k^0\}} e^{\varrho (S_k - t)} \frac{R(S_k)}{R(x)} \right].
\]
Let us distinguish the critical and subcritical cases: In the critical case, \( Q[S_1] = 0 \) and \( R(z) \sim C_R z \) as \( z \to \infty \). There exists some constant \( c \) such that for all \( t \geq 1 \), the RHS of (9.32) is less than

\[
ct \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} Q_x \left[ 1_{k < \tau^+_t \wedge \tau^+_0} e^{\kappa(S_k - t)} \right] = ct Q_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t \wedge \tau^+_0 - 1} e^{\kappa(S_k - t)} \right] .
\]

Applying (4.17) with \( L = t \) and \( \delta = \kappa \) [this \( \delta \) has nothing to do with that in (9.29)] gives that \( Q_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t \wedge \tau^+_0} e^{\kappa(S_k - t)} \right] \leq c \frac{x+1}{t} . \) Hence \( Q_x \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\tau^+_t - 1} e^{\kappa(S_k - t)} \right] \leq c(x + 1) \) for all \( t \geq 1 \). This proves (9.30) in the critical case.

In the subcritical case, we note that \( \exists x \), which, according to Lemma 5 is uniformly bounded by some constant. This completes the proof of (9.30) and hence that of Lemma 9. \( \square \)

**Proof of Lemma 10.** Observe that

\[
\{ \tau^+_t > K \} \cap \Gamma^c(t, K) \subset \bigcup_{k \in (\tau^+_t - K, \tau^+_t]} \{ \exists u \in T^c(u) : |u| \leq \tau^+_0(u) < \tau^+_t(v) = |v| \} .
\]

Recall that \( \mathcal{G}_{\delta_t} = \sigma \{ \Delta V(u), u \in \partial \} \), \( V(w, k), w, k, 1 \leq k \leq \tau^+_t \} \). For any event \( F \in \mathcal{G}_{\delta_t} \), we deduce from Corollary 3 that

\[
Q_x^+ \left[ \{ \tau^+_t > K \} \cap \Gamma^c(t, K) \right] \leq Q_x^+ \left[ F^c \right] + Q_x^+ \left[ 1_F \sum_{k \in (\tau^+_t - K, \tau^+_t]} \sum_{u \in \partial_k} f(V(u)) \right] ,
\]

with \( f(y) := P_y(\exists u : \tau^-_0(y) < \tau^+_0(y) = |v|) = P(\exists u : \tau^-_y(v) < \tau^+_y(v) = |v|) \). [We mention that \( f(y) = 0 \) if \( y > t \).] For any \( y \leq t \), by the branching property at \( \tau^-_y(v) \), \( f(y) \leq \sup_{z \leq -y} P_z(\exists u : \tau^+_y(u) < \infty) = P(\exists u : \tau^+_y(u) < \infty) := \eta(t) \) which converges to 0 since the (nonkilled) branching random walk \( V \) goes to \( -\infty \). Therefore,

\[
Q_x^+ \left[ \{ \tau^+_t > K \} \cap \Gamma^c(t, K) \right] \leq Q_x^+ \left[ F^c \right] + \eta(t) Q_x^+ \left[ 1_F \sum_{k \in (\tau^+_t - K, \tau^+_t]} \#U_k \right] .
\]

Consider an arbitrary \( \varepsilon > 0 \). By Lemma 4(ii), \( (S_{\tau^+_t} - S_{\tau^+_t - 1}, 1 \leq i \leq K) \) converges in law, and hence there exists some \( \lambda = \lambda(\varepsilon, K) > 0 \) such that for all large \( t \) (in particular, \( t > 4\lambda \)),

\[
Q_x^+ (F_1) := Q_x^+ \left( \{ \tau^+_t > K \} \cap \bigcap_{k \in (\tau^+_t - K, \tau^+_t]} \{ S_k > t - \lambda, |S_k - S_{k-1}| \leq \lambda \} \right) > 1 - \varepsilon ,
\]
with obvious definition of the event $F_1$. Let $C > 0$, and define

$$F_2 := F_1 \cap \{ \forall k \in (\tau_i^+, K, \tau_i^+)^k : \#\tilde{\Omega}_k \leq C \}.$$ 

Hence for all sufficiently large $t$, $Q_x^+(t, K) \leq \varepsilon$ and

$$Q_x^+(\Gamma^c(t, K)) \leq 2\varepsilon + [F_1 \cap F_2^c] + \eta(t)Q_x^+[1_{F_2} \sum_{k \in (\tau_i^+, -K, t_\tau^+, t_\tau^+)} \#\tilde{\Omega}_k]$$

(9.33)

$$\leq 2\varepsilon + Q_x^+(F_1 \cap F_2^c) + CK\eta(t),$$

with $\eta(t) \to 0$ as $t \to \infty$. By (1.3) and (1.4), we can find a sufficiently small $\delta > 0$ such that $Q[(\#\tilde{\Omega}_1)^\delta] = E[(\nu - 1)^\delta \sum_{|u|=1} e^{\nu V(u)}] := c < \infty$. Observe that

$$Q_x^+(F_1 \cap F_2^c) \leq C^{-\delta}Q_x^+[1_{F_1} \sum_{k \in (\tau_i^+ - K, t_\tau^+)} (\#\tilde{\Omega}_k)^\delta]$$

$$\leq C^{-\delta} \sum_{k \geq 1} Q_x^+[1_{|S_k - S_{k-1} - \lambda, S_{k-1} - t - \lambda, \tau_i^+ \geq k} (\#\tilde{\Omega}_k)^\delta]$$

$$= C^{-\delta} \sum_{k \geq 1} Q_x \left[ \frac{R(S_k)}{R(x)} 1_{|S_k - S_{k-1} - \lambda, S_{k-1} - t - \lambda, \tau_i^+ \leq t_\tau^+ \land \tau_0^-} (\#\tilde{\Omega}_k)^\delta \right]$$

$$\leq C^{-\delta} \sum_{k \geq 1} \frac{R(t + \lambda)}{R(x)} Q_x^+[1_{S_{k-1} - t - \lambda, k \leq \tau_i^+ \land \tau_0^-} (\#\tilde{\Omega}_k)^\delta],$$

since $R$ is nondecreasing and $S_k \leq t + \lambda$. By Corollary 1(i), under $Q_x$, $(\#\tilde{\Omega}_k)$ is independent of $\{S_{k-1} > t - \lambda, k \leq \tau_i^+ \land \tau_0^- \}$ and has the same law as $(\#\tilde{\Omega}_1)$; moreover $Q_x[(\#\tilde{\Omega}_1)^\delta] = Q[(\#\tilde{\Omega}_1)^\delta] = c < \infty$. Using the fact that $R(t + \lambda) \leq 2R(t - \lambda)$ for all large $t$, we have

$$Q_x^+(F_1 \cap F_2^c) \leq cC^{-\delta} \sum_{k \geq 1} \frac{R(t + \lambda)}{R(x)} Q_x^+[1_{S_{k-1} - t - \lambda, k \leq \tau_i^+ \land \tau_0^-} ]$$

$$\leq 2cC^{-\delta} \sum_{k \geq 1} Q_x \left[ \frac{R(S_{k-1})}{R(x)} 1_{S_{k-1} - t - \lambda, k \leq \tau_i^+ \land \tau_0^-} \right]$$

$$= 2cC^{-\delta} Q_x^+ \left[ \sum_{k=1}^{\tau_i^+} 1_{S_{k-1} - t - \lambda} \right].$$

Observe that $Q_x^+\sum_{k=1}^{\tau_{i-1}} 1_{S_{k-1} - t - \lambda} \leq Q_x^+\sum_{k=1}^{\tau_{i-1}} e^{\nu(S_{k-1} - t - \lambda)}$ which by (9.30) is smaller than some constant $c = c(\lambda, x) < \infty$. Going back to (9.33), we get that

$$Q_x^+(\Gamma^c(t, K)) \leq 2\varepsilon + 2cC^{-\delta} + CK\eta(t).$$

Letting $t \to \infty$, $C \to \infty$ and then $\varepsilon \to 0$ ($\delta$ being fixed), we prove Lemma 10. □
**Proof of Lemma 11.** First, note that there is nothing to prove in the subcritical case [since \( R(t) \equiv 1 \) by (6.4)]. It remains to consider the critical case, thus \( \varrho = \varrho_* \) and \( R(t) = t \) for all \( t \geq 0 \). For notational convenience, write

\[
A := \exp \left\{ -f(t_0) \varphi_{t,K} - \sum_{i=1}^{K} \varphi_{t,K} \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \left\{ f, \mu_{s_i-t_0-x_j} \right\} \right\},
\]

\[
B := e^{\varrho_* t_0} + \sum_{i=1}^{K} \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \int e^{\varrho_* z} \mu_{s_i-t_0-x_j} (dz),
\]

\[
D := t_0 e^{\varrho_* t_0} + \sum_{i=1}^{K} \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \int ze^{\varrho_* z} \mu_{s_i-t_0-x_j} (dz).
\]

Then

\[
\varphi_{t,K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(K)}) = E \left[ \frac{A}{B + (1/t)D} \right],
\]

\[
\varphi_{\infty,K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(K)}) = E \left[ \frac{A}{B} \right].
\]

Since \( f \geq 0 \), \( A \leq 1 \), and we get that

\[
|\varphi_{t,K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(K)}) - \varphi_{\infty,K}(t_0, s_1, \ldots, s_K, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(K)})| \leq \frac{1}{t} E \left[ \frac{D}{B^2} \right].
\]

We are going to prove that

\[
\frac{D}{B^2} \leq \frac{1}{\varrho_*} \text{ a.s.}
\]

Indeed, notice first that the nonkilled branching random walk \( V \) goes to \(-\infty\), \( \mu_{s_i-t_0-x_j} (dz) \) is an a.s. finite measure on \( \mathbb{R}_+ \), and \( t_0 e^{\varrho_* t_0} \leq \frac{1}{\varrho_*} e^{2\varrho_* t_0} \) for any \( t_0 > 0 \). Second, let \( \zeta_{i,j} := \sup \{ a > 0 : \int_{[a,\infty)} \mu_{s_i-t_0-x_j} (dz) > 0 \} \). Note that

\[
\zeta_{i,j} \leq \frac{1}{\varrho_*} e^{\varrho_* \zeta_{i,j}} \leq \frac{1}{\varrho_*} \int e^{\varrho_* z} \mu_{s_i-t_0-x_j} (dz),
\]

it follows that \( \int ze^{\varrho_* z} \mu_{s_i-t_0-x_j} (dz) \leq \frac{1}{\varrho_*} \left( \int e^{\varrho_* z} \mu_{s_i-t_0-x_j} (dz) \right)^2 \). Hence

\[
D \leq \frac{1}{\varrho_*} e^{2\varrho_* t_0} + \frac{1}{\varrho_*} \sum_{i=1}^{K} \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \left( \int e^{\varrho_* z} \mu_{s_i-t_0-x_j} (dz) \right)^2 \leq \frac{B^2}{\varrho_*},
\]

yielding that \(|\tilde{\varphi}_{t,K}(T_1^+, S_{1}^{(t)}, \ldots, S_{K}^{(t)}) - \varphi_{\infty,K}(T_1^+, S_{1}^{(t)}, \ldots, S_{K}^{(t)})| \leq \frac{1}{t\varrho_*} \) and proving Lemma 11. \( \square \)
We immediately obtain
\begin{equation}
\lim_{t \to \infty} Q_t^+[\tilde{\bar{\varphi}}_\infty, K(T_t^+, S_1^{(t)}, \ldots, S_K^{(t)}) 1_{\{T_t^+ > K\}}]
\end{equation}
\begin{equation}
= Q\left[ \exp\{-f(U \tilde{S}_t) 1_{U \tilde{S}_t} - \sum_{i=1}^K 1_{U \tilde{S}_t} \sum_{j=1}^{\tilde{v}_i} \langle f, \bar{\mu}^{(i,j)}_{S_i - U \tilde{S}_t - \tilde{X}_j} \rangle \} \right],
\end{equation}
which implies Lemma 12 by letting $K \to \infty$. Define
\[
\mathcal{L}_i(s, \theta) := \min_{1 \leq j \leq K} (s_j - \log \Theta(\theta_j)), \quad 1 \leq i \leq K,
\]
\[
A(t_0, s, \theta) := \exp\left\{-f(t_0) 1_{\mathcal{L}_i(s, \theta) \geq t_0} - \sum_{i=1}^K \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \langle f, \bar{\mu}^{(i,j)}_{s_i - t_0 - x_j} \rangle \right\},
\]
\[
B(t_0, s, \theta) := e^{\vartheta t_0} + \sum_{i=1}^K \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \int e^{\vartheta z} \bar{\mu}^{(i,j)}_{s_i - t_0 - x_j}(dz)
\]
for $s := (s_1, \ldots, s_K)$, $\theta := (\theta_1, \ldots, \theta_K)$, with $\theta_i = \sum_{j=1}^{m(i)} \delta_{s_i}^{(i)}$, $1 \leq i \leq K$. Denote by $\Theta(s)$ a random variable taking values in $\Omega^{\otimes K}$ with law $\prod_{i=1}^K \Xi_{s_i - s_{i-1}}(d\theta^{(i)})$. Then (recalling $s_0 := 0$)
\[
\tilde{\bar{\varphi}}_\infty, K(t_0, s) = \int \mathbb{E}\left[ A(t_0, s, \theta) \mathcal{L}_i(s, \theta) \right] \prod_{i=1}^K \Xi_{s_i - s_{i-1}}(d\theta^{(i)}) \mathcal{L}_i(s, \theta) \mathcal{L}_i(s, \theta)
\end{equation}
\[
= \mathbb{E}\left[ A(t_0, s, \Theta(s)) \mathcal{L}_i(s, \theta) \right] \mathcal{L}_i(s, \theta) \mathcal{L}_i(s, \theta), \quad (t_0, s) \in \mathbb{R}_+^* \times \mathbb{R}_+^K.
\]
Plainly the function $\tilde{\bar{\varphi}}_\infty, K$ is bounded by 1. Therefore Lemma 12 will be a consequence of Lemma 4 if we have checked that for any fixed $s \in \mathbb{R}_+^K$, the function $t_0 \to \tilde{\bar{\varphi}}_\infty, K(t_0, s)$ is continuous excepted on a set that is at most countable.

To this end, we study at first the continuity of $y \to \langle f, \bar{\mu}_y \rangle$ which are i.i.d. copies of $\langle f, \bar{\mu}_y \rangle$. Recall that $\langle f, \bar{\mu}_y \rangle = \sum_{u \in \mathcal{E}_y} f(V(u) - y)$ for any fixed $y > 0$. Let us consider $\tilde{\tau}_t^+(u) := \inf\{k : V(u_k) \geq t\}$ and define the associated optional line $\tilde{\mathcal{C}}_t$ just like (5.7). By the definition of the stopping line $\mathcal{C}_y$ and the continuity of $f$, we immediately obtain
\begin{equation}
\lim_{k \to \infty} \left| \langle f, \bar{\mu}_{y_k} \rangle - \langle f, \bar{\mu}_y \rangle \right| \leq f(0) \sum_{u} 1_{\{\tilde{\tau}_t^+ = |u|, V(u) = y\}}
\end{equation}
\begin{equation}
= f(0) \sum_{u \in \mathcal{C}_y} 1_{\{V(u) = y\}}
\end{equation}
for any sequence \((y_k)_k\), such that \(y_k \to y\) when \(k \to \infty\). On the other hand, Corollary 1(ii) also holds for this family of optional lines by replacing \(n\) by \(\bar{\tau}_i^+\). Then we take the expectation (under \(P\)) in (9.35) and obtain that

\[
(9.36) \quad \mathbb{E}\left[\limsup_{k \to \infty} \left( f, \overline{\mu}_y \right)_k - \left( f, \overline{\mu}_y \right) \right] \leq f(0)e^{-\alpha y} \mathbb{Q}(S_{\bar{\tau}_y} = y),
\]

where \(\bar{\tau}_y := \inf\{n \geq 0 : S_n \geq y\}\). Denoting as before by \((H_n)_{n \geq 1}\) the (strict) ascending ladder heights of \(S\), we remark that

\[
\Lambda_1 := \{y : \mathbb{Q}(S_{\bar{\tau}_y} = y) > 0\} \subset \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} \{y : \mathbb{Q}(H_n = y) > 0\} \text{ is countable.}
\]

Then by (9.36), \(y \to \langle f, \overline{\mu}_y \rangle\) is continuous (in \(L^1\) hence a fortiori in probability) on \(y \notin \Lambda_1\). The same holds for \(y \to \langle f, \overline{\mu}_y^{(i,j)} \rangle\) with any \(i, j \geq 1\). Now we write explicitly \(\Theta(s)\) by a random vector \(\Theta(s) = (\theta_1, \ldots, \theta_K)\) with \(\theta_i := \sum_{j=1}^{M^{(i)}} \delta_{x_j^{(i)}}\) and the associated random variables \(\mathcal{E}_i(s, \theta)\), \(1 \leq i \leq K\). [The random variables \(M^{(i)}\) take values in \(\mathbb{N}\), \(X_j^{(i)}\) in \(\mathbb{R}\), and \(\mathcal{E}_i(s, \theta)\) in \(\mathbb{R} \cup \{\infty\}\).] Observe that all the following three events are countable:

\[
\Lambda_2 := \bigcup_{i=1}^{K} \{x : P(x = X_j^{(i)}, \text{ for some } 1 \leq j \leq M^{(i)}) > 0\},
\]

\[
\Lambda_3 := \bigcup_{i=1}^{K} \{x : P(x = \mathcal{E}_i(s, \theta)) > 0\},
\]

\[
\Lambda_4 := \Lambda_3 \cup \bigcup_{i=1}^{K} \{s_i - x - y : x \in \Lambda_2, y \in \Lambda_1\}.
\]

We claim that \(\varphi_{\infty,K}(t_0, s)\) is continuous on \(t_0 \notin \Lambda_4\). To check this, we fix \(t_0 \notin \Lambda_3\) and take a sequence \(t_n \to t_0\) as \(n \to \infty\). Let

\[
E := \bigcup_{i=1}^{K} \bigcup_{j=1}^{M_j^{(i)}} \{X_j^{(i)} \in s_i - t_0 - \Lambda_1\} \cup \{\mathcal{E}_i(s, \theta) = t_0\}.
\]

Since \(t_0 \notin \Lambda_4\), we deduce from the definition of \(\Lambda_2\) that \(P(E) = 0\). Observe that on \(E^c\), \(s_i - t_0 - X_j^{(i)} \notin \Lambda_1\) and \(t_0 \neq \mathcal{E}_i(s, \theta)\), hence \(A(t_n, s, \theta)1_{E^c} \to A(t_0, s, \theta)1_{E^c}\) in probability. In other words, \(A(t_n, s, \theta) \to A(t_0, s, \theta)\) in probability, and the same holds for \(B(t_n, s, \theta)\). By the dominated convergence theorem, when \(n \to \infty\),

\[
\varphi_{\infty,K}(t_n, s) = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{A(t_n, s, \Theta(s))}{B(t_n, s, \Theta(s))}\right] \to \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{A(t_0, s, \Theta(s))}{B(t_0, s, \Theta(s))}\right] = \varphi_{\infty,K}(t_0, s),
\]
proving the desired continuity at any \( t_0 \notin \Lambda_3 \). Then we can apply Lemma 4 and get Lemma 12. \( \square \)

9.5. Proof of Lemma 16. Throughout the proof, \( \delta > 0 \) is taken to be sufficiently small.

Proof of (i). Let us write \( f(x) := -\log \mathbb{E}e^{-x\Gamma_1} \) for \( x \geq 0 \); By a Tauberian theorem,

\[
f(x) \sim a \frac{x}{\log(1/x)}, \quad x \to 0.
\]

Let \( A_x := \{ \max_{1 \leq i \leq \xi} Y_i \leq x^{-1+\delta/2} \} \) (max_\emptyset = 0). Then for \( x > 0 \),

\[
\mathbb{P}(A_x^c) \leq \mathbb{E} \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} x^{(1+\delta)(1-\delta/2)} Y_i^{1+\delta} = cx^{(1+\delta)(1-\delta/2)} = o(x^{1+\delta/3}), \quad x \to 0,
\]

since \( \delta > 0 \) is small. By independence of \((\Gamma_i)\), we have

\[
\mathbb{E}[e^{-x \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} \Gamma_i}] = \mathbb{E}[e^{-\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} f(xY_i)}] = \mathbb{E} \exp \left[ -\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} f(xY_i) 1_{A_x} \right] + o(x^{1+\delta/3}).
\]

Define

\[
\Upsilon_x := \frac{\log(1/x)}{x} \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} f(xY_i) 1_{A_x}, \quad 0 < x < 1.
\]

Plainly as \( x \to 0, \Upsilon_x \to a \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i \) almost surely. Notice that on \( A_x, xY_i \leq x^{\delta/2} \), which together with the asymptotic properties of \( f \) implies that for all \( 0 < x < x_0 \) with \( x_0 \) sufficiently small, \( f(xY_i) \leq 2a \frac{xY_i}{\log(1/(xY_i))} \leq \frac{4a}{\delta} \frac{xY_i}{\log(1/x)}, \) for all \( 1 \leq i \leq \xi \). Hence

\[
\frac{\log(1/x)}{x} (1 - e^{-x/\log(1/x)\Upsilon_x}) \leq \Upsilon_x \leq \frac{4a}{\delta} \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i.
\]

By the dominated convergence theorem,

\[
\frac{\log(1/x)}{x} \left( 1 - \mathbb{E} \exp \left[ -\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} f(xY_i) 1_{A_x} \right] \right) \to a \mathbb{E} \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i.
\]

This and (9.37) yield that as \( x \to 0, \frac{\log(1/x)}{x} (1 - \mathbb{E}[e^{-x \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} \Gamma_i}]) \to a \mathbb{E} \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i \) which implies (i) by a Tauberian theorem.
Proof of (ii). Define \( W := \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i \) and let \( \lambda > 1 \) and \( 0 < \varepsilon < a/2 \). By conditioning on \((Y_i)_{1 \leq i \leq \xi}\) and using the tail of \( \Gamma_i \), we have that for large \( t \),

\[
\mathbb{P}\left( \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i \Gamma_i > t \right) \geq \mathbb{P}\left( \max_{1 \leq i \leq \xi} (Y_i \Gamma_i) > t, W \leq \lambda \right)
\]

\[
\geq \mathbb{E}\left[ 1_{\{W \leq \lambda\}} \left( 1 - \prod_{i=1}^{\xi} \left( 1 - \frac{(a - \varepsilon)Y_i}{tp} \right) \right) \right]
\]

\[
\geq (a - 2\varepsilon) \mathbb{E}\left[ 1_{\{W \leq \lambda\}} \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i^p \right] t^{-p},
\]

which implies that

\[
\liminf_{t \to \infty} t^p \mathbb{P}\left( \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i \Gamma_i > t \right) \geq (a - 2\varepsilon) \mathbb{E}\left[ 1_{\{W \leq \lambda\}} \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i^p \right].
\]

Letting \( \varepsilon \to 0 \) and then \( \lambda \to \infty \) yields the lower bound.

To prove the upper bound, we remark that by considering \( c + Y_i \) instead of \( Y_i \) (with \( c > 0 \)), we can assume without loss of generality that almost surely \( Y_i \geq 1 \) (if \( i \leq \xi \)).

By Markov’s inequality (\( \delta \) being small),

\[
\mathbb{P}(W > t^{1-\delta/2}) \leq t^{-(p+\delta)(1-\delta/2)} \mathbb{E}[W^{p+\delta}] = o(t^{-p}).
\]

Let \( \varepsilon > 0 \) be small, and define

\[
A_{(9.39)} := \left\{ \max_{1 \leq i \leq \xi} (Y_i \Gamma_i) \leq \varepsilon t \right\}, \quad B_{(9.39)} := \left\{ \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i \Gamma_i \geq t \right\},
\]

\[
C_{(9.39)} := \{ W \leq t^{1-\delta/2} \}.
\]

By conditioning on \( Y := \sigma \{ Y_i, 1 \leq i \leq \xi, \xi \} \), we get that

\[
\mathbb{P}(A_{(9.39)} \cap B_{(9.39)} \cap C_{(9.39)}) \leq t^{-p-\delta} \mathbb{E}\left[ 1_{C_{(9.39)}} \left( \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i \Gamma_i \right)^{p+\delta} \left| Y \right. \right].
\]

By convexity, \( (\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} y_i \Gamma_i)^{p+\delta} \leq (\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} y_i)^{p+\delta-1} (\sum_{i=1}^{\xi} y_i \Gamma_i^{p+\delta}) \) for any \( y_i \geq 0 \). Observe that by using the tail of \( \Gamma_i \),

\[
\mathbb{E}[\Gamma_i^{p+\delta} 1_{\{\Gamma_i \leq \varepsilon t/y_i\}}] \leq \int_0^{\varepsilon t/y_i} (p + \delta) x^{p+\delta-1} \mathbb{P}(\Gamma_i > x) dx \leq \frac{2(p + \delta)}{\delta} (\varepsilon t/y_i)^{\delta},
\]

for all large \( t \) and \( y_i \leq t^{1-\delta/2} \). It follows that for any \( 0 < \varepsilon < 1 \),

\[
\mathbb{P}(A_{(9.39)} \cap B_{(9.39)} \cap C_{(9.39)}) \leq c_{p, \delta} t^{-p} \varepsilon^{\delta} \mathbb{E}\left[ W^{p+\delta-1} \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i^{1-\delta} \right].
\]
Since $Y_i \geq 1$, the above expectation is less than $\mathbb{E}[W^{p+\delta}]$ which is finite. Let $1 < q < p$ and $p - q < 1/2$. Using Markov's inequality and conditioning on $\mathbb{Y}$, we obtain

$$\mathbb{P}(\{\exists t : \varepsilon t < \Gamma_i Y_i < (1 - \varepsilon)t\} \cap B(9.39) \cap C(9.39))$$

$$\leq \mathbb{P}(\{\exists t : \varepsilon t > \sum_{j \neq i} Y_j \Gamma_j > \varepsilon t\} \cap C(9.39))$$

$$\leq (\varepsilon t)^{-1-q} \mathbb{E} \left[ \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i \Gamma_i \left( \sum_{j \neq i} Y_j \Gamma_j \right)^q 1_{C(9.39)} \right]$$

$$\leq (\varepsilon t)^{-1-q} \mathbb{E} \left[ \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i \left( \sum_{j \neq i} Y_j \right)^{q-1} \left( \sum_{j \neq i} Y_j \Gamma_j^q \Gamma_i \right) 1_{C(9.39)} \right]$$

$$\leq (\varepsilon t)^{-1-q} \mathbb{E}[\Gamma_1] \mathbb{E}[\Gamma_2^q] \mathbb{E}[W^{1+q} 1_{C(9.39)}],$$

since $(\sum_{j \neq i} Y_j \Gamma_j)^q \leq (\sum_{k \neq i} Y_k)^{q-1}(\sum_{j \neq i} Y_j \Gamma_j^q)$ for all $i$ by the convexity inequality and since the $\Gamma_j$’s are i.i.d. and independent of $\mathbb{Y}$. Furthermore, observe that $\mathbb{E}[W^{1+q} 1_{C(9.39)}] \leq \mathbb{E}[W^{p+\delta}] \mathbb{E}[(1+q-p-\delta)(1-\delta/2)]$. Therefore, we obtain

$$\mathbb{P}(\{\exists t : \varepsilon t < \Gamma_i Y_i < (1 - \varepsilon)t\} \cap B(9.39) \cap C(9.39)) \leq c_{\varepsilon,q} t^{-p-(1+q-p)\delta/2}.$$  

This combined with (9.38) and (9.40) yields that, for all large $t$,

$$\mathbb{P}(B(9.39)) \leq \mathbb{P}(\max_{1 \leq i \leq \xi} (Y_i \Gamma_i) > (1 - \varepsilon)t, C(9.39)) + c'_{p,\delta} t^{-p} \varepsilon^\delta + o(t^{-p})$$

$$\leq \mathbb{E} \left[ \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} \frac{(a + \varepsilon) Y_i^p}{(1 - \varepsilon)^2 t^p} 1_{W \leq t^{1-\delta/2}} \right] + c'_{p,\delta} t^{-p} \varepsilon^\delta + o(t^{-p}).$$

It follows that

$$\limsup_{t \to \infty} t^p \mathbb{P} \left( \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} Y_i \Gamma_i > t \right) \leq \mathbb{E} \left[ \sum_{i=1}^{\xi} \frac{(a + \varepsilon) Y_i^p}{(1 - \varepsilon)^p} \right] + c'_{p,\delta} \varepsilon^\delta,$$

where $\delta > 0$ is fixed. Letting $\varepsilon \to 0$ yields the upper bound and completes the proof of the lemma.

10. Notation.

Tree

$T$: genealogical tree;

$\emptyset$: root;

$|u|$: generation of the vertex $u$;

$\nu(u)$: number of children of $u$;

$\mathcal{F}_n$: sigma-field of the branching random walk up to generation $n$. 

TOTAL PROGENY OF A KILLED BRANCHING RANDOM WALK 3875
Branching random walk

\((V(u), u \in \mathcal{T})\): branching random walk;
\(\mathcal{L}\): point process on \(\mathbb{R}\) governing the positions of the offspring of an individual;
\(\mathcal{L}[a]\): set of vertices absorbed below level \(a\);
\(Z[0, L]\): number of vertices in \(\mathcal{L}[0]\) that did not touch level \(L\);
\(\mathcal{C}_t\): set of vertices absorbed above level \(t\);
\(\mu_t\): point process on \(\mathbb{R}\) composed of the overshoots of the vertices in \(\mathcal{C}_t\);
\(\tau_t^-(u)\), respectively, \(\tau_t^+(u)\): for a vertex \(u\), hitting time of \((-\infty, t)\), respectively, \((t, \infty)\), on its ancestral line \((\infty\) if no such time).

Killed branching random walk

\(\mathcal{Z}\): set of nonkilled vertices;
\(Z\): cardinal of \(\mathcal{Z}\);
\(\mathcal{H}(t)\): set of nonkilled vertices absorbed above level \(t\);
\(H(t)\): cardinal of \(\mathcal{H}(t)\);
\(\mu_t\): point process on \(\mathbb{R}\) composed of the overshoots of the vertices in \(\mathcal{H}(t)\);
\(\bar{\mu}_\infty\): limit in distribution of \(\mu_t\) conditioned upon being nonempty.

Good and bad vertices

\(B(u)\): function controlling the jumps of the offspring of \(u\);
\(\beta_L(u)\): gives the first time there is an atypical jump. \(\beta_L(u) = \infty\) means that vertex \(u\) is a good vertex;
\(\mathcal{H}(u)\): set of vertices in \(\mathcal{H}(t)\) which are good;
\(\bar{\mu}_{B,t}\): the point process \(\bar{\mu}_t\) restricted to good vertices;
\(\mu_{B,t}\): the point process \(\mu_t\) restricted to good vertices;
\(Z^g[0, L]\): number of good vertices in \(Z[0, L]\);
\(Z^b[0, L]\): number of bad vertices in \(Z[0, L]\).

One-dimensional random walk

\(S_n\): one-dimensional random walk;
\(R(x)\): renewal function of \(S_n\); see (5.20);
\(\tau_t^+\): hitting time of \((t, +\infty)\);
\(\tau_t^-\): hitting time of \((-\infty, t)\);
\(T_t^+\): overshoot at level \(t\);
\(T_t^-\): undershoot at level \(t\).

Spine decomposition

\(w_n\): spine at generation \(n\);
\(\mathcal{G}_n\): sigma-field generated by \(w_k, V(w_k), \mathcal{G}_k\) for \(k \leq n\);
\(Q_x\): defined by \(\frac{dQ^n}{dP^n}|_{\mathcal{G}_n} := e^{\rho x} \sum |u|=n e^{\rho V(u)}\). Under \(Q_x\), the spine is a centered random walk;
\(Q_x^+\): defined by \(\frac{dQ_x^+}{dP_x}|_{\mathcal{G}_n} := \frac{1}{R(x)} e^{\rho x} \sum |u|=n R(V(u)) e^{\rho V(u)} 1_{\{\tau_0^- > |u|\}}\). Under \(Q_x^+\), the spine is a centered random walk conditioned to stay positive;
\( Q^{(0-)}_x \), defined by \( \frac{dQ^{(0-)}_x}{dp_x}|_{|F_n^x|} := e^{-\varrho - x} \sum_{|u|=n} e^{\varrho - V(u)} \). Under \( Q^{(0-)}_x \), the spine is a random walk with negative drift.

**Martingales**

\[
\begin{align*}
\partial W_n := -\sum_{|u|=n} V(u)e^{\varrho - V(u)}, \\
M^*_n := \sum_{|u|=n} R(V(u))e^{\varrho V(u)}, \\
M^{(0-)}_n := \sum_{|u|=n} e^{\varrho - V(u)}.
\end{align*}
\]

**Acknowledgments.** We thank Pascal Maillard for helpful discussions and an anonymous referee for her/his careful reading on the first version of this paper.

**REFERENCES**


---

**E. AïDÉKON**

DEPARTMENT OF MATHEMATICS AND COMPUTER SCIENCE

TECHNISCHE UNIVERSITÄT EINDHOVEN

P.O. BOX 513, 5600 MB EINDHOVEN

THE NETHERLANDS

E-MAIL: elie.aidekon@tue.nl

**Y. HU**

DEPARTEMENT DE MATHÉMATIQUES, UMR 7539

UNIVERSITÉ PARIS XIII

93430 VILLETANEUSE

FRANCE

E-MAIL: yueyun@math.univ-paris13.fr

**O. ZINDY**

LABORATOIRE DE PROBABILITÉS UMR 7599

UNIVERSITÉ PARIS VI

4 PLACE JUSSIEU

F-75252 PARIS CEDEX 05

FRANCE

E-MAIL: olivier.zindy@upmc.fr